Pari

HA

BA

CAN

LATE P

PRI

Darius - AND Hawkins's

INTERESTING ACCOUNT

OF THE

HARDSHIPS AND SUFFERINGS

OF THAT

BAND OF HEROES,

WHO TRAVERSED THE WILDERNESS

IN THE

CAMPAIGN AGAINST QUEBEC

IN 1775.

By John Joseph Henry, Esq.

LATE PRESIDENT OF THE SECOND JUDICIAL DIS-TRICT OF PENNSTLYANIA.

---:0::@::0:

LANCASTER:

PRINTED BY WILLIAM GREEN
1812.

HANDSHIPS AND STITUMES

SACHARI TO GVAS

1-970 c.2

CONTRACTOR OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE

All in the contract of the con

PRESEND BY WHALAM CREWN

6.01

TO THE PUBLIC.

Comment of the Contract of the

the was in resident the

130 - 150 Hilliam Son Comment

Will be to the of the off property for the

THIS work is given to the world, as left by judge HENRY. Had he lived to superintend the printing of it himself, many alterations would, no doubt, have been made, many passages which may at present appear obscure, would have been fully explained, and many differencies of style corrected. As the work purports to be written by judge HENav, it was thought improper to make any alterations or additions, trusting that the world, when acquainted with the circumstances under which it was published, will be disposed to pardon trivial errors, as to the truth of the principal facts; the following letter, from general Michael Simpson, is ample testimony:

WARD DIE CONTRA

DEAR SIR,

I have read your work "of the expedition through the wilderness in 1775." So far as I was concerned, in the transactions related in the work, they are truly stated. That expedition, perhaps, the most arduous during the revolutionary war, is truly represented. The public may, in the general, be assured, that the account is genuine.

Your humble servant,
MICHAEL SIMPSON.

PARTICIPATION OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PROPERTY

LIFE OF THE

pe-

So

ed.

bus

AUTHOR.

WRITTEN BY HIS DAUGHTER.

THERE is an observation trite, true, and universally admitted, that the lives of those who have not embraced a wide sphere of action, are uninteresting and perfectly devoid of any incitements to attention. Biography of Warriors, statesmen, is perused with avidity—but it is not merely their own history, but that of the times, in which they lived, at least partially so. But descending to the greater walks of life, when we trace the history of a good and unfortunate man, through all the varied evolutions, that peculiarly mark his fate, and prevent him from being enrolled in the list of those beings, who have found the path divested of thorns—it is to some, still interesting; and although the incidents are not of a nature to excite wonder or astonishment.

they may still possess the power to call forth the sympathy of minds of feeling—minds that have been taught to feel another's woe.

JOHN JOSEPH HENRY, the author of the following pages, was born November 4th, 1758, at Lancaster, Pennsylvania—his father WIL-LIAM HENRY, Esq. a man whose memory is still revered by those who possessed any knowledge of him, his strict honesty and known probity, renders it sacred to such as claimed him as their friend. He was possessed of a mechanical genius in a strong degree; he it was, who invented the well known

screw-auger.

Warmly addicted to this his favorite passion, he wished to imbibe into the minds of his children, a taste for mechanics; with some of them he succeeded. As soon as his son JOHN JOSEPH, had attained the age of 14. he bound him an apprentice to an uncle, who was a gunsmith, then a resident at Lancaster, but after sometime removed to Detroit, taking his nephew with him. At that place, his stay was but short, on account of scarcity of business—he returned on foot with a single guide, who died in the wilderness, which lay between Detroit and his home—it was here that hardships and misfortune first were felt, his future companions during a length of years, devoted to God and his country. Young HENRY returned to his parents and home, dissatisfied with the employment. judicious father had pointed out for him, as the means by which he wished him to gain a future subsistance.—His arduous mind panted after military glory; the troubles of his country, which was then making vigorous, and ultimately successful struggles for a total emancipation from slavery, wrought strongly upon one, the acme of whose hopes and wishes was, to be one of those who contended most for freedom. In the fall of 1775, he clandestinely, joined a regiment of men raised in Lancaster county, for the purpose of joining Arnold, who at that time, was stationed at Boston. His father was commissary to the troops, which office obliged him to attend them to Reading. It was at this time, under circumstances, which rendered him most liable to detection from his parent, he left his home to wander at the age of 16, in a strange land. Thus a thirst for glory, inflamed his youthful breast, and superseded every other passion and affection of his heart. After enduring all the fatigues of a veteran soldier, they entered Canada on his birth-day-an eventful one to him. He endured hardships here, which in his own simple style, he fully enumerates. It was in prison, where he lay for nine months, that he contracted a disease, (the scurvy,) which at that time, did not make its appearance—but six weeks after-

orth that

fol-58, ILno-

sed and as os-

dewn

oass of me son 14.

ho er,

his of gle lay

re lt, of

y a

wards on his return home, at a time when least expected, it made its appearance under its most malignant form-it was at a time, when it became a duty incumbent on him, to continue in the army. A captaincy had been procured for him in the Virginia line, and a lieutenancy in that of Pennsylvania, he had designed to accept of the command under the hero Morgan, which was that of captain, but the disposer of all events, arrested his carreer, and instead of his fond expectations being accomplished, all his hopes were blasted, his high prospects jaded, and became a dreary void, by the order of that Omnipotence, who furnished him with that fortitude, which enabled him through all his misery, to kiss the rod that chastised him. It was after two years continuance on the couch of sickness, his leg, which was the unfortunate cause of all his illness, began to heal, and renovated health, to give hopes of peace yet remained for him.

As his lameness precluded all possibility of his again entering the army; ashe had, by a disregard of parental authority, at least so far as concerned his trade, forfeited his claim to his father's exertions, to place him in such a situation, as would make him capable of rendering himself useful to society. A vigorous effort on his part was necessary; resolution was not wanting; it was made. He

1en

der

ne,

had

ine,

nia.

un-

sted

cta-

be-

that

that his

oim.

the

un-

heal.

CHCC

st so

laim

such

e of

gor-

solu-He bound himself as an apprentice to John Hubley, Esq. prothonotary of the county of Lancaster, as a clerk in the office, here for four years, he pursued his business with the closest application, and discharged the duties of his office with unabated care and strictness, and when the labors of the day were over, his nights were consumed in study, endeavoring to compensate himself in some measure, for the neglect, that his education had suffered by his becoming a soldier. His frame still somewhat debilitated by his illness, was not capable of sustaining the fatigues of office, his health suffered much from labour so severe and application so intense. The time of his indentures being expired, he commenced the study of the law, under Stephen Chambers, Esq. Here he became acquainted with his future companion in life, the youngest sister of Mr. Chambers. He practised law from the year 1785, until December 1793. As his law knowledge was known to be extensive, his abilities and talents met their due reward, with an appointment, by his excellency Thomas Mifflin, Governor, to the office of president, of the second judicial district of Pennsylvania. Interior a to do the test

A number of years had now elapsed, his family was large; by an infortunate removal to a country, at that period sickly, he was attacked by the gout, which from inexperi-

ence, and owing to his having no knowledge as to the consequences that would necessarily ensue, did not take proper precautions, so as to render it a regular disease. that deceptious name, numerous disorders invaded his frame, and at times with so much severity, that he was necessitated to continue at home, and prevented him from executing his official duties as a judge. It was during seven long years of bodily suffering, that his mind and memory, reverted to those scenes (more forcibly than ever) which formed so eventful a period in a life of misfortune and vicissitude. The interesting narrative of the sufferings of that band of heroes, of which he was the youngest, is a simple tale of truth, which he undeviatingly throughout his book adheres to.

th

le

leg

ye

se

his

str

He is supported in all his assertions, by the testimony of a number of his companions in that arduous campaign, men of character and respectability—his relation of incidents, his descriptive accounts of the country they passed through, the situation of Quebec and the disposition of the army, all mark him to have been a youth of accurate observation, of a comprehensive and intelligent mind. Possessing, as he must necessarily have done, activity of spirit and contempt of fatigue, he gained the approbation and esteem of his seniors. The buoyant spirits of youth

rose high over misfortune; under the pressure of the severest distress, vivacity was still retained, and burst forth at intervals to

cheer his hopeless companions.

edge

sari-

ions,

nder

rders

nuch

tinue

uting

uring

at his

e and

ruth,

book

npan-

cha

inci-

coun-

Que

obigent sarily of fateem

Disease had now made rapid progress on a constitution weakened by repeated attacks, and accumulation of disorders, which no skill could counteract or remedy. The nonperformance of his duties caused petitions, from the several counties, to be presented to the legislature, for his removal; nothing was alleged against him but absence. That honorable house, having examined and considered the charges, acquitted him with honor. His commission he retained for the space of two years afterwards—but illness and debility increasing, and a knowledge of his infirmities being incurable, compelled him to resign that office, which he had held with integrity, for seven teen years. Four months succeeding, his wornout frame was destined to feel the stroke of death, and his freed soul, to seek refuge in the bosom of his Father and his God.

nor a growing they are come more than the although ad one of the of the editories the est in a first publication of box Springer and the lights that are are to be a figure do the tree through the page golds to be to the top mile the ene or insurance edical spitmens above edithe entropy of the compact of the property. with the I'm given the best of a to make to be Analis of the breekers and being provident all a real dier mat be deem gerger beid continuent of incident of facilisms. - an wind in bus even i half charaching even adinal reillergibe and site whiteer trait of the commence in this in it points. and recipion to the first bed but the in the land ្នា<mark>មព្</mark>រ ខ្លួនរ៉ូន្គី ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រីស្រាស់ ស្រ or the form of the second of the second in and the first that the first the first the first than selling and all to m, - sind at a solid - 13... 1

CAMPAIGN AGAINST QUEBEC, &

and sout wing the file provide a provide definition of the

My Dran Chicago,

Starring of his

THERE is a point, in the history of the American revolution, hitherto little attended to: an ret imperfectly related, and now at this late day almost forgotten; which would deserve and require the talents and genius of a Xenophon, to do it real justice. As your father in early life had a concern in that adventure. permit him to relate to you in the words of truth, a comnerdious detail of the sufferings of a small band of herees; unused, to be sure, to military taetics and due subordination, but whose souls were fired by an enthusiastic love of country, and a spirit such as has often inspiried our ancestors, when determined to be free. In giving you this relation, knowing him as you do, you will scarcely call in question his verueity; particularly when he assures you upon the honor of a gentleman and an honest man; that every word here related, to the best of his recollection and belief, is literally true. He could not be southjust to your morals, your veracity, or intellity, as to state any thing to you which he know, or even suspected to be untrue. He has himself heen too much the victim of base liars, not to endeavour to eradicate so vile a principle from your minds. His own education, though made by his truantisms, (in avoidance of the bounteous and liberal designs of his good father,) an incorrect one, yet the piety and real religious fervour of his parents, never would tolerate a lie. This mental vice, to them, was the greatest of all abominations, as it is with your father: it is also his most fervent hope and prayer, that every one of you, will not only contemn the lie, but hold in sovereign detestation the liar.

Persons at your age, and at this advanced stage of the improvement and melioration of our soil. in a climate so far south as ours, can scarcely form a correct conception, but from actual observation, of the sterility, the dreariness and the destitution of every comfort of life, which a wilderness in a high northern latitude exhibits. A confidence however in your good sense, encourages, and in fact animates, him, to put that upon paper which has a thousand times, in detached parcels, been the subject of amusing prattle around the fireside. This is done the rather at this time, as some very atrocious scoundrels who never looked an enemy in the eye, now assume the garlands and honors, which ought to adorn the brows of more worthy men.

In the autumn of 1775, our adorable WASHINGgon, thought it prudent to make a descent upon Canada. A detachment from the American grand army, then in the vicinity of Boston (Massachusetts,) was organized, to fulfil this intention, by the route of the Kennebec and Chaudient rivers. It was intended as a co-operation with the army of General Montgomery, who had entered the same province, by the way of Champlaine and Montreal. Colonel Benedict Arnold was appointed the commander in chief of the whole division. The detachment consisted of eleven hundred men. Enos was second in comcorfer-

lie.

that

age

soil.

cely

ob-

and

ch a

its.

en-

that

de-

sing

ra-

un-

ght

NG-

upcan

as-

en-

auion

pad m-

old the

of m-

lie,

mand. Of this I knew nothing, but from report. Riflemen composed a part of the arma-These companies, from sixty-five to seventy-five strong, were from the southward: that is, captain Daniel Morgan's company from Virginia; that of captain William Hendricks' from Cumberland county in Pennsylvania, and captain Matthew Smith's company from the county of Lancaster, in the latter province. The residue, and bulk of this corps, consisted of troops from Massachusetts, Rhode-Island and Connecticut. It has flown from my memory, whether we had any from New-Hampshire; but there is an impression on my mind that we had, as general Dearborne, who was of the latter province, commanded a company in the expedition. All these men were of as rude and hardy a race as ourselves, and as unused to the discipline of a camp, and as fearless as we were. It fell to mo to know many of them afterwards intimately; speaking generally, without any allusion to particulars, they were an excellent body of men. formed by nature as the stamina of an army, fitted for a tough and tight defence of the liberties of their country. The principal distinction between us. was in our dialects, our arms, and our dress. Each man of the three companies. bore a rifle-barreled gun, a tomehawk, or small axe, and a long knife, usually called a "scalping-knife," which served for all purposes, in the woods. His under-dress, by no means in a military style, was covered by a deep ashcolored hunting-shirt, leggins and mockasins, if the latter could be procured. It was the silly fashion of those times, for riflemen to spe the manners of savages.

Our commander Arnold, was of a remarkable character. He was brave, even to temerity, was beloved by the soldiery, perhaps for that quality only:—he possessed great powers of persuation, was complaisant: but withal sordidly avaricious. Arnold was a short handsome man, of a florid complexion, stoutly made, and forty years old at least.

On the other hand Morgan was a large strong bodied personage, whose appearance gave the idea history has left us of Belisarius. His manners were of the severer cast; but where he became attached he was kind and truly affectionate. This is said, from experience of the most sensitive and pleasing nature; activity, spirit and courage in a soldier, procured his good will and esteem.

Hendricks was tall, of a mild and heautiful countenance. His soul was animated by a conuine spark of heroism. Smith was a good looking man, had the air of a soldier, was illiterate and outrageously talkative. The officers of the eastern troops, were many of them men of sterling worth. Colonel Christopher Green seemed too far advanced in life for such hard service. yet he was inspired by an ardour becoming a youth. He afterwards did the public good service at Redbank on the Delaware, in the autumn of 1777. Majors Meigs, Febiger and Bigelow, were excellent characters. As we actod in the advance, the latter gentlemen were not well known to us until sometime afterwards. Your father was too young to enjoy any other honor, than that of exposing himself in the character of a cadet, to every danger. This little Army in high spirits, marched from Prospect. hill near Cambridge in Massachusetts, on the

cable

WHE

juali-

18118

n, of

forty

trong

e the

His

vhere

f the

good

utiful

gen-

ook-

erate

f the

terl-

vice

ng a'

good

the

act-

not

ther

chaittle

the

11th of September, 1775, and arrived at Newburyport (which is formed by the waters of the Merrimae river) on the following day. This place, at that time, was a small but commercial town, near the border of Massachusetts. Here we remained encamped five-days, providing our selves with such articles of real necessity, as our small means afforded. On the afternoon of the sixth day, we embarked aboard of ten transports: sailed in the evening, and at dawn of day descried the mouth of the Kennebee river. The wind was strong but fair. The distance of this run was 150 miles. We ascended the river to colonel Cobourn's shipyard; here we left our vessels, and obtained batteaux, with which we proceeded to Fort-western. At this place, on the day of our arrival, an arrangement was made by the commander in chief, which in all probability sealed the destiny of your parent. It was concluded, to despatch an officer and seven men in advance, for the purposes of ascertaining and marking the paths, which were used by the Indians at the numerous carrying-places in the wilderness, towards the heads of the river: and also, to ascertain the course of the river Chaudiere, which runs from the heighth of land, towards Quebec

To give some degree of certainty of success to so hazardous an enterprise, Arnold found it necessary to select an officer of activity and courage; the choice fell upon Archibald Steele of Smith's company, a man of an active, courageous, sprightly and hardy disposition, who was complimented with the privilege of naming his companions. These consisted of Jesse Wheeler, George Merchant, and James Clifton, of Morgan's; and Robert Cunningham, Thomas Boyd,

B 2

John Tidd, and John McKonkey, of Smith's company. Though a very youth, yet in a small degree accustomed to hardships, derived from long marches in the American woods, Steele's course of selection next fell upon your father, who was his messmate and friend. Two birch-bark cances were provided; and two guides, celebrated for the management of such water craft, and who knew the river as high up as the Great-carrying-place were also found. These were Jeremiah Getchel, a very respectable man, and John Horse, an Irishman who had grown grey in this cold climate.

This small party, unconscious of danger, and animated by a hope of applause from their country. set forward from Fort-western in their light barks, at the rate of, from fifteen to twenty, and in good water, twenty-five miles per day. These cancer are so light, that a person of common strength, may carry one of the smaller kind, such as ours were, many hundred yards without Yet they will bear a great burthen, and swim nearly gunwale deep; an admirable description of them is given by Hearne, in his Journey to the Coppermine-river. Steele's eanoe, bore five men with their arms and baggage. which last was indeed light in quantity and quality, one burrel of pork, one bug of meal, and 200 weight of biscuit. The other cance carried seven men, their arms and baggage, and a due proportion of provisions,

On the coming of the 23d of September, our party arrived at Fort-Halifax, situated on the point, formed by a junction of the Sabasticoog and Kennebec rivers. Here our commander

[.] See Note L at the end.

from choice, do emigrate. Many instances might be given of this circumstance of the animal evo-

Steele, was accosted by a captain Harrison, or di da-Huddlestone, inviting him and the company to long. his house. The invitation was gladly accepted, Ourse as the accommodation at the Fort, which con-O WAS risted of old Block-houses and a stocade in a ruink onous state, did not admit of much comfort: besides rated it was inhabited, as our friend the captain said, and by a rank tory. Here for the first time the aprentplication of the American term "tery." was de-Word fined to me by the captain. Its European defi-, and nition was well known before. Another inter-STOY esting conversation, upon the part of the captain, strack my mind as a great curiosity in natural history, and well deserving commemoration; he observed that he had emigrated to the place counlight he then resided at, about thirty years before, most probably with his parents, for he did not Chese then appear to be much beyond forty. That at that period the common-deer which now inhaamon kind bits our more southern climate, was the only animal, of the deer kind, which they knew, unthen. less it was the elks; and them but partially. In a short space of time the moose-deer appeared rable n his in small numbers, but increased annually afterwards, and as the one species became more nu-5 62merous. the other diminished: so that the kind rage, of deer first spoken of, at the time of this inforquaand mation, according to the captain, was totally driven from that quarter. The moose-deer reignrried ed the master of the forest. This anecdote, if due true, might in such minds as those of Buffon, or De Paw, give occasions to systems in natural-his-OUP tory, totally inconsistent with the laws of nature: a the 2000 still there may be something in it; animals like human beings, whether forced by necessity or nder

nomy, in various parts of the world. The above relation is the only instance which has come to my knowledge, where one species has expelled another of the same genus. If the fact be true. it is either offected by a species of warfage, or some peculiarity in the appearance of the ope kind, and of horror or perhaps of discust in the other, we know the rock-goat (steinback of the Germans and boquetin of the French) formerly inhabited the low hills of southern France and of the Pyrenees; they have been driven thence by some peculiar cause, for they are now confined to the tops of the highest mountains in Europe. It is true, it has been frequently advanced by men of respectability and information in Pennsylvania, that the grey-fox which is indigenous in the United States, and all North America. has been driven from the Atlantic sea-coast into the interior, by the introduction of the redfox from Europe. But we have no sufficient data to warrant this assertion. The truth probably is, that as the grey-fox is a dull and slow animal, compared with the sprightliness, rapidity, and cunning of the red-fox, that the first has been thinned by the huntsmen, and gradually receded from the seacoast to the forest, where. from his habits, he is more secure. The cunning and prowess of the latter, has enabled him to maintain his station among the farms, in despite of the swiftness and powerful scent of the dogs. But that which puts this assertion out of view, is that the red-fox is indigenous throughout North America. He and the grey-fox are found in the highest intitudes, but there, their skins are changed into more beautiful furs than those of ours, by the effects of climate. An other notion has been started within these 30

years past, of the fox squirrel, expelling the

large grey squirrel : but it is fallacious.

abave

me to

pelled

true.

es or

in the

of the

merly

e and

hence

eon-

ns in

v. ad-

ation

indi

Ame-

coast

red-

eient

pro-

slow.

pidi-

t has

y re-

here.

cun-

him

n de-

the

ut of

ugh-

are

heir

thau

Be these things as they may, we spent un agreeable and most sociable evening with this respectable man, and his amiable family. On the following day, our party rose curly, and accompanied by our host, waited upon the tory. who then shewed himself to be un honest man. of independent principles, and who claimed the right of thinking for himself. He exchanged a barrel of smoke-dried salmon for a barrel of pork, upon honest terms. We set out from this place, well pleased with our host, the old torvi and our bargain. In a very few days, without other accident than the spraining of Lieutenant Steele's ancle, by his slipping, when carrying a cance over the path, at one of the intermediate portages, we arrived safely at Norrigewoo falls. Coming to the landing place, the water being smooth and very deep, a rock, as we passed it. drew my attention very particularly, it was standing in a conical form, five feet in perpendicular height, and ten or twelve feet in diameter at the base. I observed that next the water, the face of the rosk, which was a bloish flint, was, as it were, scalloped out down to the very water's edge. Asking Getchel how this had occurred, his reply was that the Indians, in former times, had from thence obtained their spear and arrow points. It seems unreasonable that without a knowledge of Iron, they should have been capable of executing such a labour. However, upon observation and reflect tion, since Getchel's time, an inducement from experience and reasoning occurs, which influences me to believe, that he might have been correct in his observation. The rock, no doubt,

still remains, and there is leisure for inquiry and discussion. We were hurried. The village within one hundred yards of the pitch of the fall, was evidently a deserted Indian town. We saw no one there; It was without the vestige of inhabitants. Dressing our victuals here at mid-day, an occurrence happened, which disgusted me in an extreme degree. On this day, un estimate of our food was made, and an allotment in quantity to each man, though no actual separation of shares took place, as that, it was agreed, should happen at the twelve-mile carrying place. By the estimate now made, it seemed that there was something of a surplus. As we had had hard work, that and some preceding days, and harder fare, our good commander was inclined to indulge us. The surplus was allotted for this day's fare, It happened that M'Konkey was, by routine, the cook. He boiled the meat, (vegetable food of any kind was not attainable,) and when sauntering towards the fall, he called us to dinner. We came eagerly. He was scated on the earth, near the wooden bowl. The company reclined around in a like posture, intending to partake; when McKonkey raising his vile and dirty hands. struck the meat, exclaiming, "By G-d this was our last comfortable meal." The indelicaey of the act, its impiety, and the grossness of the expression, deprived the company of appe-On several subsequent occasions McKonkey showed himself as mean in spirit, as he was devoid of decency. We soon rid ourselves of him. Many years afterwards, at Lancaster, in Pennsylvania, he applied and received a loan by way of charity from me, which he meanly solicited with the most abject sycophancy. So true

it so th

th

ed

pli

resolution block the will

sit pli joi tai co kii ho

M

ve.

so ar ing for the

T

if

ca pa it is, in general, that those who disregard the social decencies of life, are equally incapable of those virtues which make man respectable in

society.

inquiry

village .

of the

n. We

vestige

here at

ich dis-

his day.

n allot-

o setu-

that. it

ve-mile

nade. it

urplus

ne pre-

d comhe sur-

It han-

c, the food of

aunter-

r. We

h, near

around

when

hands.

d this

delien-

less of

appe-

Konhe was

ter, in

y soli-

o true

On the afternoon of this day, we crossed to the west side of the river below the fall : searched for, and with difficulty found the carrying place. Having marked it with precision, we rested awhile. On the west side of the river. not very distant from us, there was a considerable extent of natural meadow.* One of our party, exploring the country for deer, met with two whitemen who had come from a distance, mowing the wild grass of the meadow. An agreeble barter ensued—we gave salted pork, and they returned two fresh beaver tails, which, when boiled, renewed ideas, imbibed with the May-butter of our own country. Taste, however, is arbitrary, and often the child of necessity. Two years before this, acorns had supplied me with a precarious sustenance, on a journey from Sandusky to Pittsburg, it momentarily sustained life and bodily labour, but the consequence was ill health. Your respectable kinsman, General Gibson, received me into his house at Logstown on the Ohio, and restored me sound to my parents. These minute matters are noted here, from an expectation, that knowing the privations men may suffer in respect to food, you will each of you remember to receive the dispensations of Providence, of every kind, if not with thankfulness, at least with submis-

We passed the portage of Norridgewoo falls. Thence for several days, the navigation for such cances as ours, was tolerable, and in the most part convenient. We ascended the river rapid-

^{*} See Note II.

ly, blazing every carrying-place. Having now second many miles from the last white inhabitants at Norridgewee, it became us therefore to proceed cautiously. A circumspection was adopted, which though prudent in the predicament we were in, appeared to be rather harsh to the feelings; the firing of a gun was inhibited; though the weather was chilling, we danced seaveely make a smoke at night. Angling for treut and shub in the marving and evening, made up our stock of fresh food. We frequently saw ducks, &c. and many moose-deer, yet we discharged not a gun; in truth we had been made to believe, that this country had namerous Indians in it.

The party proceeded without molestation, but from natural rock, and a strict current (by the 27th of September,) to the twelve-mile carrying-place. Here a new scene opened. Our guides professed that reither of them had ever been north of this place across the carrying-place, but Getchel alleged he had hunted to the east

a

of the river.

Now we assumed the title of being our own guides, giving to Getchel due respect and attention for his information relative to the route north. He informed me that the course of the river which is injudiciously called the "Dead river" tended 60 or 100 miles northerly, took a short turn southwardly, and was then within 12 miles of us. That that part was full of rapids, and impassable to boats, or even cances. We searched for the carrying-place, and found a path tolerably distinct, which we made more so by blazing the trees and snagging the bushes with our temphawks; proceeding until evening, the party encamped at the margin of a small

MON'S lake, perhaps about half a mile wide, where inha there was plenty of trout, which old Clifton, refore who was good at angling, caught in abundance. m was Here, in a conference on the subject, it was reedicasolved that two persons of the party should reharsh main, (with about one half of the provisions,) a inhiuntil the return of our main body, calculating e darthe return would be in eight or ten days. It neling had been observed that Clifton, being the eldest ening. of the company, yet brave and a good shot, from quentthe fatigues we had endured, had begun to flag. r, yet With the assent of our chief, the younger part d been of us proposed to him to remain where we then nerous were, with the better part of the provisions. After considerable altereation he assented, on n, but condition of his having a companion. The youngby the est of the party, nominated McKonkey, who carrycould not restrain his joy at the proposal. It guides was advised for them to retire to the south end of been the pond, perhaps a mile, and there, as in a perplace. feet recess, remain concealed; knowing McKone east key, the consequences were foreseen. After the accomplishment of this affair, lieutenant Steele P OWD parted the provision appropriated for the marchatteners, not by pounds or ounces, my dear children, route but by " whose shall be this." Some of you have of the been taught how this is done, if, you should Dead. have forgotten, it will be well now to tell you took of it. The principal of the party, if he is a within gentleman and man of honor, divides the whole of raportion equally into as many parts as there are ances. men including himself; this is done under the found eyes of all concerned, and with their approbation, more the officer then directs some one of the compaushes ny to turn his back upon him, and laying his

ening_

amall

be this?" The answer is hap-hazard, A. S. &c.

hand on a particular portion, asks "whose shall

or any other of the party. It has frequently accurred, that we were compelled to wide the necessaries of life in this way, and it could not be fairly said, that any fraud or circumvention

took place.

September 28th, we left Clifton and his companion in a most dreary wild, but with enough to support them : and if they would set honorably, to assist us. A laughable occurrence enaued. Sergeant Boyd and myself had, that day, the charge of unloading and loading the canoes, which, as customarily, being very light and easily blown off shore by a puff of wind, were drawn half their lengths on the beach; we ran a race who should perform his duty soonest-he arrived first. Taking up his cance suddenly, but hoping to have a better stand than the shore presented, he set his foot on a large bed of moss seemingly frm. and sunk ten feet into as cold water while fluid, as was ever touched. We soon passed the pond, found the nath, marked it, and came, at the end of several miles, to a second pend, if my recollection serves, larger than the former: traversing this, we encamped more cautiously than ever. On the next day. pursuing the path, and marking it, a third pond of small diameter was presented to our view. Passing this, by the evening we encamped on the north-hank of the Dead-river.

This river, which is nothing more than an extension of the Kennebec, is called by this remarkable name, because a current, a few miles below the place we were now at, and for many miles above it, is imperceptible. It is deep and perhaps two hundred and fifty yards wide. The ground we footed within the last three days, is a very rugged isthmus, which forms the great

quently
ide the
ld not

s comnough honor ise enat day. anoes. d easidrawn a race rrived t hope pref moss s cold We arked amped

ed on
in exist remiles
many
o and
The
is a

pond

weir

bend of the Kennebass Coming from the high ground towards the Dead-river, we passed a bog, which appeared, before we entered it, as a beautiful plat of firm ground, level as a bowling green, .. and covered by an elegant green moss. That da to mve my shoes for severer service, mockusins had been put in their place. Every step we made, sunk us knee-deep in a bed of wet turf. My feet were pained and lacerated by the snaps. of the dead pines, a foot and more below the surface of the moss; these and many other accurrences, which happened afterwards, convinced me more than reading could, of the manner of the formation of turf. Sometimes, to lighten the canoes when ascending strict water, several of us would disembark, and proceed along shore. and on many occasions, traverse a point of land to save distance. Doing this, we often met with what we thought a flat ground covered by moss. Entering the parterre, as it might be called, and running along that which we found to be a log covered with moss, the moisture on the log, would cause a foot to slip-down we would come. waist deep in a bed of wet moss; such incidents always created a laugh. A spark, if these beds of moss had been dry, as they were wet, would have made a dreadful conflagration: the upper country seemed throughout as if covered with it. To the south and west of the bog first mentioned, there was a natural meadow of great extent. On the west it reached, seemingly, to the foot of the mountains several miles off. A beautiful creek serpentined through it and formed a convenient harbor and landing place, opposite to our camp, and directly to which the Indian path led us.

The timber trees of the arc in a great measure different from those of our country. Here are neither oaks, hickories, poplars, maples or locusts; but there is a great variety of other kinds of excellent timber, such as the white and yellow pines, hemlock, cedar, cypress, and all the species of the firs. These trees, in the low grounds, grow to a very large size, on the hills, as we approach northwardly, they seem to dwindle, particularly as we come to the "heighth of land;" but again rise to a superb height, as we descend into the intervale, on the streams running into Canada. Among the trees of this country, there are two which deserve particular notice, because of their remarkable qualities. These are the balsam fio, (Canada balsam. Balm of Gilead fir, or balsamum Canadense pinus balsomea: which produces the purest turpentine,) and the yellow birch. The first, as its vulgar name imports, yields a balsamic liquid, which has been, and perhaps now is, much esteemed by the medical profession. The bark is smooth, except that there are a vast number of white and lucid protuberance upon it, of the size of a finger or thumb-nail, bulging from the surface of the bark. This tree grows to the size of from 15 to 20 inches in diameter. From the essays made, it seemed to me that a vial containing a gill, might be filled in the space of an hour. Getchel, our guide, taught me its use. In the morning when we rose, placing the edge of a broad knife at the under side of the blister, and my lips at the opposite part, on the back of the knife, which was declined, the liquor flowed into my mouth freely. It was heating and cordial to the stomach. attended by an agreeable pungency. This practice, which we adopted, in all likelihood, contributed to the preservation of health. For though much wet weather ensued, and we lay often on low and damp ground, and had very many successions of cold atmosphere; it does not now occur to me, that any one of us was assailed by sickness, during this arduous excursion. The yellow birch is useful in many particular instances to the natives. They form the body of the tree into setting-poles, paddles, spoons and ladies. The bark, its better property, serves as a covering for the frame of the canoe, much in the same manner as the Esquimaux and Greenlanders apply the seal skin. To you it may appear to be a strange assertion, but to me it seems true, that the birch-bark cance is the most ingenius piece of mechanism, man in a rude state is capable of performing. This bold idea. requires a disclosure of the means and the manner of the work, which shall be done before I leave the subject.* From the bark of yellow-birch, the Indian also forms bowls, and baskets of a most beautiful construction, and it even serves as a wrapper for any nice matter which it is wished to keep securely, much in the manner we use brown wrapping-paper. The appearance, of the yellow-birch tree at a distance, is conspicuous. Approaching near it, in the autumn, it seems involved in rolls, something resembling large circular rounds of parchment, or yellow paper. There is in my mind no question, but that among a numerous and industrious people, such as the Chinese, this indigenous product would become an article of general use in various ways. The bark, when taken from

mea-

Here

es or

other

e and

ll the

unds.

e ap-

par-

nd ;

cend

into

there

ausc

e the

ilead

mea:

d the

e im-

been.

me-

cept

ueid

nger

f the

15 to

le, it

night

when

t the

e op-

was freeach.

rac-

OUP

^{*} Sec Note III.

the tree, may be obtained lengthwise of the tree, from one to four feet in breadth, and of a longth equal to the circumference. It is sometimes white with a yellowish east, but more usually of a pale, and sometimes of a deep gold colour. It is partible, when ever so thick, into the most filmy sheets. The Indians, for cances, use it of the thickness of from a fourth, down to the eighth of an inch, according to the size of the vessel. Curiesity and convenience, made us reduce it often to a film, by no means thicker or more substantial, than the sifky paper we obtain from India. It serves equally well for the pencil as paper. Ink however flows upon it. In the course of time a medium may be discovered to preclude this inconvenience—this bark will preserve bet-

ter than paper.

The company, not apprehending the reverses which fortune had in store for them. left the encampment (September 30th) full of courage and hope, though a strong drift of snow, which whitened all the surrounding hills, had fallen during the night. Having smooth water, we paddled away merrily, probably for thirty miles. Getchel, besides his sheer wisdom, possessed a large fund of knowledge, concerning the country, which he had derived from the aborigines, and much humorous anecdote, with which, in spite of our privations, he made us laugh. It was omitted to be mentioned that before we left our last encampment, it became a resolution of the whole party, that the pork in the possession of each one, should be eaten raw, and to cat but in the morning and evening. As we could not obtain food, in this miserable portion of the globe, even for money, if we had it, and having nothing else than our

army and our courage to depend fon; anticquainted with the true distance of our expedition for we had neither map novehort vet resolved to accomplish our orders at the hazard of our lives we prudently began to board our provision: half a biscuit and half an inchasquare of raw pork, became this evening's meal. The days journey broughtous to the foot of acrapid, which convinced as that the term " Dead-river." was much misapplied. The night was spent, not upon feathers, but the branches of the Ar of the spruce. It would astonish you, my dear children, if there was leisure to explain to you the many comforts and advantages, those trees afford, to the way worn traveller "Suffice it now

October Met. The morning brought on new labors. Our steondary guide and myself, thinks ing that we could manage the water. slipped into our canoe Getchel and another worked Steele's, while our aumpanions, erassing the hill, marker the carrying place. From our camp two-thirds at least of these rapids. were conscaled from our view. In much danger, and by great exertion, we submounted them. in less than an hour. Daking in our company, we had good water till the evening, when we were impeded by a precipitate fall of four feeting We encamped. October 12d. 11 Carrying here, we had good water all the next day: Mere fatigue and great lassitude of body; most likely, in a good measure, owing to the want of food, caused us to sleep well. From cautionary motives our guns, though not uncared for, were considered as useless, in the way of obtaining food. Several of our company angled successfully for trout, and a delicious shub, which we

Curry t-often distan-India. per. urse of eclude e bet-Verses ft the Durage which fallen ir. we miles. seed a counaberiwith ade w

that

eame

pork

e - ea-

and

oney.

L our

e tree.

longth'

etimes

revally

colour.

e most

t of the ghth of eall a fall-fish. This place became remarkable to me, as cometime afterwards, my friends general Simpson, Robert Dixon, and myself, were here at the point of death. This you will find in the sequel. Carrying a few perches around this precipiec, we get into good water, and

th

th

pi

T: t

ca

th

su

ph

B

m

de

then performed a severe days labor.

October 3d. The evening brought us to our encampment, on the south side of the river. Angling was resorted to for food Sergeant Boyd, observing low ground on the other side of the river, and an uncommon coldness in the fator, passed over, and in an hour returned with a dozen trout, of extraordinary appearance. Long, broad and thick. The skin was of a very dark hue, beautifully sprinkled with deep crimson spots. Boyd had caught these in a large and deep spring-head. Contrasting them with those we caught in the river, they were evident; ly of a different species. The river trout, were of a pale ground, with pink spots, and not so flat or broad. The next day, proceeding onward, we here and there met with rough water. In the evening we were told, that on the next day, we probably should arrive at the camp of Natania, an Indian, whom our commander was instructed to capture or kill. Natanis was well known to the white inhabitants of the lower country; they knew from him the geographical position of his residence. The uninstructed Indian, if he nossesses good sense, necessarily from his wanderings as a hunter, becomes a geographer. This good man (as we subsequently knew him to be) had been wrongfully accused to Arnold, as a spy, stationed on this river to give notice to the British government, of any party passing this way into Canada: honce that cruel order.

October 4th. We landed some miles below where we supposed his house was. Our canoes were brought upon the shore, and committed to the care of two of the party. We arrived at the house of Natanis, after a march, probably of three miles, over a flat country covered with pines, &c. Approaching on all sides with the utmost circumspection, we ran quickly to the cabin, our rifles prepared, and in full belief that we had caught Natanis, Some were persuaded, at the distance of 200 yards from the place, that they saw the smoke of his fire: But the bird was flown. He was wiser and more adroit, than his assailants, as you will afterwards learn. The house was prettily placed on a bank twenty feet high, about twenty yards from the river, and a grass plat extended around. at more than shooting distance for a rifle, free from timber and brushwood. The house, for an Indian cabin, was clean and tight, with two doors, one fronting the river, the other on the opposite side. We found many articles of Indian fabrication, evidently such as would not be totally abandoned by the owner: besides, it was remarked, that the coals on the hearth, from their appearance, had been burning at least within a week past. These notions did not allay our apprehensions of meeting with Indian enemies. The canoes, in the meantime, having been brought up, we embarked and proceeded with alacrity. This afternoon, in a course of some miles, we came to a stream flowing from the west, or rather the northwest. As we were going along in uncertainty, partly inclined to take the westerly stream, one of the party forturntely saw a strong stake, which had been driven down at the edge of the water, with a

genwere l find

and

o our river, reant side n the

very rimlarge

with dent: were o flat

n the we we anis,

unin, acted vn. to they f his

posider-Tbis

as a the

WAY

piece of neatly folded birch-bark, inserted into a split at the top. The bark, as it was placed. pointed up the westerly stream, which at its mouth, seemed to contain more wather than that of our true course. Our surprize and attention. was much heightened, when opening the bark, we perceived a very perfect delineation of the streams above us, with several marks which must have denoted the hunting camps, or real abodes of the map-maker. There were some lines, in a direction from the head of one branch. to that of another, which we took to be the course of the paths, which the Indians intended to take that season. This man we attributed to Natanis, if not his, to his brother Sabatis. who, as we afterwards knew, lived about seven miles up this westerly stream. For when our party, after returning to the twelve mile carrying-place, had again re-ascended the river, we were told, by the crew of one of Morgan's boats. that they had mistaken the westerly stream as the due route, and had found deserted cabins at the distance already mentioned, and the property of the late inhabitants, placed in a kind of close cages, made of birch-bark in the forks of the trees; these they most iniquitously plundered. Venison, corn, kettles, &c. were the product. Inspecting the map thus acquired, we pursued our journey fearlessly. Now the river became narrower and shallower. The strength of each of us, was exerted at poling or paddling the canoes. Some strict water interfered, but in a few days, we came to the first pond, at the head of the Dead-river. October 7th. This first pond, in the course of the traverse we made. might be about a mile, or a little more, in diameter. Here, on a small island, scarcely containing one-fourth of an acre, we discovered

ne

111

fo

ed into

placed.

at its

an that

ention.

e bark.

of the

which

or real

e som e

branch

he the

tended

ributed

abatis.

t seven

en our

carry-

er. we

am as

hins at

operty

fclose

of the

dered.

oduct.

ursued

ecame

f each

ng the

ut in a

e head

s first

made.

n dia-

y con-

and ate, a delicious species of cranberry, entirely new to us. It grew upon a bush from ten to twelve feet high, the stock of the thickness of the thumb, and the fruit was as large as a May-duke cherry. In the course of one or two miles, we reached a second pond. Between this pend and the third, we carried; the communication, though not long, was too shallow for our canoes. The carrying-place was excessively rugged, and in high water, formed a part of the bed of the stream. The country around us, had now become very mountainous and rough. Several of these mountains seemed to stand on insulated bases, and one in particular, formed a most beautiful cone, of an immense height. We rested for the evening.

October 8th. Being near the heighth of land, which divides the waters of New-England, from those of Canada, which run into the St. Lawrence. The weather in consequence of the approaching winter, had become piercingly cold. My wardrobe, was scanty and light. It consisted of a roundabout jacket, of wellen, a pair of half worn buckskin breeches, two pair of wellen stockings, (bought at Newbery-port,) a hat with a feather, a hunting-shirt, leggins, a pair of mockasins, and a pair of tolerably good shoes,

which had been closely hoarded.

We set out early, yet jovially. We entered a lake surrounded by high and eraggy mountains, and perpendicular rocks of very considerable altitude, which about eleven e'clock, A. M. east us into a dusky shade. Pulling the paddie, as for life, to keep myself warm, some trifling observation, which fell from me, relative to the place we were in, such as its resemblance to the vale of death, which drew the attention of

the company: Getchel, in his dry way, turning toward me, said "Johnny, you look like a blue leather whet-stone." The simplicity and oddity of the expression, and the gravity of his mannor, caused great merriment at my expense, it. was enjoyed on my part, certain that it was not an expression of dis-esteem, but affection, for the man liked me. These minim tales and iejune occurrences, are related to convey to your minds, an idea, how men of true spirit will beard death in every shape, even, at times, with laughter, to effectuate a point of duty which is considered as essential to the welfare of their country. Thus we went on, incessantly laboring, without sustenance, until we came, about 8 o'clock, to the extreme end of a fifth and the last lake. This days voyage might amount to

H

la

41

he

fr

it.

tir

th

br

14

to

BE

te

fifteen or twenty miles.

On this lake, we obtained a full view of those hills which were then, and are now, called the "Heighth of land." It made an impression upon us, that was really more chilling, than the air which surrounded us. We hurried ashoredrew out our canoes, and covered them with leaves and brush-wood. This done. with our arms in our hands, and our provision in our pockets, we made a race across the mountain; by an Indian path, easily ascertainable, until we arrived on the bank of the Chaudiere river. The distance is about five miles, counting the rising and descent of the hill as two. This was the acme of our desires. To discover and know the course of this river, was the extent of our orders: beyond it, we had nothing to do. Our chief, wishing to do every thing a good officer could, to forward the service, asked, if any one could climb a tree, around the foot of which

we then stood? It was a pine of considerable height, without branches for forty feet; Robert Cunningham, a strong athletic man, about twenty-five years old, presented himself. In almost the twinkling of an eye, he climbed the tree. He fully discerned the meandering course of the river, as upon a map, and even descried the lake Chaudiere, at the distance of fourteen or afteen miles. The country around and between us and the lake, was flat. Looking westward, he observed a smoke; intimating this to us, from the tree where he sat, we plainly perceived it. Cunningham came down; the sun was set-

ting seemingly in a clear sky.

rning

blue

oddi-

man-

as not

a, for

id je-

your

augh-

s con-

èoun-

oring.

out 8

id the

unit to

those

d the

ession

in the

ore-

i our

n our

ntain.

til we

river.

e the

This

r and

ent of

ő do.

offi.

any

bich

Now our return commenced—It so occurred, that I was in the rear, next to Getchel, who brought it up. We ran in single file, and while it was light, it was observed by me, as we tried to stride into the footsteps of the leader, that he covered the track with his feet; this was: no mean duty. It required the courage, the vigour, and the wisdom, which designates genuine manhood. Our object was to be concealed from a knowledge of any one who might communicate our presence there, to the Canadian government. The race was urged, and became more rapid by the indications of a most severe storm of rain; we had scarcely more than gotten half way up the hill, when the shower came down in most tremendous torrents. The night became dark as pitch; we groped the way across the ridge, and i descending, relied on the aceuracy of our leader, we continued with speed. The precipice was very steep; a root, a twig perhaps, caught the buckle of my shoe; -tripped—I came down head foremost, unconscious how far, but perhaps twenty or thirty feet.

D.

How my gun remained unbroken, it is impossible to say. When I recovered, it was in my hands. My companions had out-stripped me. Stunned by the fall, feeling for the path with my feet, my arrival at the cance-place was delayed, till ten at night, an hour and more later than my friends. An erection called a tent, but more correctly a wigwam, was made in the hurry with forks, and cross-poles, covered by the branches of fir. It raised incessantly all that night. If the clothes we wore had been dry, they would have become wet—so we laid down in all those we had on. Sleep came to my eyes, not with standing the drippings of the pelting

r ti

b

storm, through the humble roof.

October 9th .- We arose before day The canoes were urged suddenly into the water, it still rained bard, and at day light we thought of breakfasting. Gracious God! what was our fare? What could we produce for such a feast? Rummaging my breeches pockets, I found a solitary biscuit and an inch of pork. Half of the biscuit was devoted to the breakfast, and so also by each person, and that was consumed in the cances as we paddled over the lake. The rain had raised the lake, and consequently the outlets about four feet. We slided glibly along, over passages where a few days previously, we had toted our cances. At the outlet of the fourth lake, counting as we came up, a small duck appeared within shooting distance. It was a diver, well known in our country—a thing which we here contemn. Knowing the value of animal food, in our predicament, severals of us fired at the diver; Jesse Wheeler, however, (who all acknowledged as an excellent shot,) struck it with his ball. A shout of joy arose—the little

possi-

in my

i me

th my

laved,

r than

mare

hurry

y the

l that

n dry

down

eyes.

elting

ne ca-

t still

ht of

S OUP

east?

a 80-

of the

also

n the

rain

out

long

purth

duck

18 8 B

hich

imal

ed at

o all

k it

little

diver was safely deposited in our canoe. We went on quickly, without accident, till the evening, probably traversing a space of more than forty miles. At night-full we halted, weary and without tasting food since morning. Boyd and Cunningham, who were right-hand-men on most occasions, soon kindled a fire against a fallen tree. An occurrence this evening took place. which my dear children you will hardly credit, but which (permit me to assure you) is sacredly true; the company sat themselves globmily around this are. The cooks, according to routine, (whether our chief or others,) picked the duck, and when picked and gutted, it was brought to the fireside. Here it became a question, how to make the most of our stock of provisions. Finally it was concluded to boil the duck in our camp-kettle, together with each man's bit of pork, distinctively marked by running a small skewer of wood through it, with his particular and private designation. That the broth thus formed, should be the supper, and the duck on the ensuing morning should be the breakfast, and which should be distributed by whose shall be this." Strange as this tale may appear to you, in these times; the agreement was religlously performed. Being young, my appetite was pavenous, as that of a wolf, but honor bound the stomach tightly.

We rose carly, and each person selected his bit of pork, which made but a single mouthful;—there was no controversy. The diver was parted most fairly, into ten shares, each one eyeing the integrity of the division. Lieutenant Steele eausing the "turning of the back," the lottery gave me a victory over my respectable friend Cunningham. His share, was the head

and the feet, mine one of the thighs. Hungry and miserable as we were, even this was sport to our thoughtless minds. In fact, we were sustained by a flattering hope, that we should

soon meet our friends "the army."

Setting out early on the 10th of October, by the evening we made nearly fifty miles. The bit of pork and the rest of the biscuit became my supper. My colleagues were similarly situated. The morning sun saw us without any food. We did not despond. The consolatory idea, that on that, or the next day, we should containly join the army, infused energy into our minds and bodies. Yet being without food, though we loved each other, every endearment which binds man to man, was as it were forgotten, in a profound silence. After a long days journey still we were supperless.

The succeeding morning, (11th.) starting carty, we ran at a monstrous rate. The waters by additional rains above, had risen greatly. By ten or eleven o'clock A. M. we observed a great smoke before us, which from its extent, we could ascribe to nothing else, than the encampment of the army, our friends and fellow soldiers. After some time, the light canoe, several hundred yards before us, (with Steele and Getchel in it,) passed between the forks of a tree, which lay rooted in the middle of the stream, where most likely it had lain for many years. All its branches had been worn away: by the annual frictions of the ice or waters, except those which formed the fork, and those stood directly against the current, nearly a foot out of water, and ten or more feet apart. Seeing our friends pass through safely, and being unconscious that we were worse or less advenungry turous watermen than they were, we risked it. sport We ran with great velocity. My good Irishman were: steered. By an unlucky stroke of some one of hould our paddles, (for each of us had one,) but from: his situation and power over the vessel it was er, by fairly attributable to the steersman, the canoe he bit was thrown a little out of its true course, just ae my as it was entering the prongs of the fork. Triuated. fling as this may appear to you, to us it was the food signal of death. One of the prongs took the iden. right hand side of the canoe, within six inches l een of the bow, immediately below the gunwale. o our Quick as lightning that side of the cance was food. laid open from stem to stern, and water was rment: gushing in upon us, which would inevitably: rgothave sunk us in a second of time, but for that days. interference of Providence, which is atheistically called presence of mind, otherwise a host of COPmen could not have saved us from a watery rs by grave. Instinctively leaning to the left, we By sunk the gunwale of that side down to the wagreat ter's edge, by which we raised the broken side we. an inch and more out of it. Calling loudly to ampour companions ahead, they soon saw our disv soltress and put in, at the great smoke. Carefully and steadily sitting, and gently paddling, many and hundred yards, we landed safely. Here was no of a army, no friends, no food, only a friendly fire. f the kindled by ourselves as we ascended the river: nany it had been our camp. The fire we had made way had searcely more than smoked, but now it had · excrept into the turfy soil, and among the roots bose. of trees, and was spread over half an acre. Our foot situation was truly horrible. When we had ex-Sec. amined the broken cance, and had rummaged eing both for the means of mending it, every heart Yon-

comed dismayed. Our bireh bark and pitch,

pat

CAT

10

usu

inte

Oh:

dre

scen

slip

weig

deel

in th

held

Non

me.

Alm

this

of n

clan

then

tear

unkı

who

and a

pari

semi

Ders

fore

lents

and

WAS

post

Were

ceda

tomi

had been exhausted in former repairs, we were without food, perhaps one hundred miles from the army, or perhaps, that army had returned to New England. That sensation of the mind called "The horrors." seemed to prevail. Getchel alone was really sedate and reflective He ordered the other guide to search for birehbark, whilst he would look among the pines for turpentine. We followed the one or the other of these worthies, according to our inclinations, and soon returned with those desirable materials. The cedar root was in plenty under our feet. Now a difficulty occurred, which had been unforeseen, and which was seemingly destructive of all hope. This was the want of fat or oil of every kind, with which to make the turpentine into bitch. A lucky thought occurred to the youngest of the company, that the pork bag, lay empty and neglected, in one of the canoes. The thought and the act of bringing it: were instantaneous. The bag was ripped, and as if it had been so much gold dust, we seraped from it about a pint of dirty fat. Getchel now prepared an abundance of pitch. The cedar root gave us twine. The canoe was brought up to the fire. We found every rib except a few at the extreme points, actually torn from the gunwale. All hands set to work-two hours ofterwards, the canoe was borne to the water.

We embarked, and proceeding cautiously, as we thought, along the shore, (for we dared not yet, with our eraggy vessel, venture into deep water,) a snag, standing up stream, struck through the bottom of the cance. This accident hap pened about five hundred yards from the fire we put back with heavy hearts and great difficulty—our friends followed. It took an hour to

165

re

the

ail

Ve-

200

nes:

tho

elible

der

bar

C6-

OF

ura:

red

rk

the

it

DW.

up

BW.

be f

20

ot:

ed

patch the gap. The cup of serrow was not yet full. As the men were bearing the wounded cause to the water, sergeant Boyd who paddled in the small cance, which was drawn up as usual, taking hold of the bow raised it waist high (as was right) intending to slide it gently into the water—the bank was steep and slipp'ry. Oh! my dear children, you cannot conceive the dread and horror the succeeding part of this scene produced in our minds: Mr. Boyd's feet slipped—the canoe fell from his hands—its own weight falling upon the cavity, formed by the declivity of the bank and the water-broke it in the centre, into two pieces, and which were held together by nothing but the gunwales. Now absolute despair for the first time seized me. A thought came across my mind, that the Almighty had destined us to die of hunger, in this inhospitable wilderness. The recollection of my parents, my brothers and sister, and the clandestine and cruel manner of my descrting them, drew from me some hidden, yet burning tears, and much mental contrition. This was unknown, unseen and unheard of by any, but he who is present every where, knows every thing, and sees our inmost thoughts. Getchel, (comparing small things with great, who much resembled Homer's description of Ulysses, in his person, and whose stayed and sober wisdom and foresight, also bore a likeness to the talents of that hero,) resigned, yet thoughtful and active, instantly went to work. The cance was brought to the fire, and placed in a proper posture for the operation. The lacerated parts were neatly brought together, and sewed with cedar root. A large ridge of pitch, as is eustomary in the construction of this kind of water tight. Over the seam a patch of strong bark a foot in width, and of a length sufficient to encircle the bottom, even to the gunwales, was sewed down at the edges and pitched. Again over the whole of the work, it was thought prudent to place our park bag, which was well saturated with liquid fat. It was a full yard wide, and was laid down in the same manner. This work which was laborious nearly consumed the rest.

an

WE

DD

Ku

tre kii

ed

E.F

ca; tha

ani

abo

er

eut

ses of

etr

Th

ban

eme

IY.

of the day.

We set out notwithstanding the lateness of the hour, and would it is likely have gone all night, well knowing the water below to be good, but for an enlivening occurrence, which soon after happened. Hunger drove us along at a cautious but rapid rate. The sterility of the country above, had afforded us no game, reither moose, bear nor wolf: nothing in short, but the diver, and a red pine squirrel, which was too small and quick to be killed by a bullet. These squirrels. did not much exceed in size our striped ground squirrel. About dusk the lieutenant's cause. four hundred yards before us, had within view. turned a sharp point of land, when we heard the crack of a rifle, and presently another and a huzza. Apprehending an attack from an enemy. we pulled hard to be enabled to sustain our friends. In a moment or two, observing them pulling for the north shore, which was steep, we looked up it for the enemy. Good Heavens! what a sight! We saw a moose-deer, falling on the top of the bank. A cry of exultation seemed to burst the narrow valley of the river. Stolle had struck the deer in the flank, as it was leaving the water, but it sprung up the bank with agility. Wheeler, with better fortune for us all.

pierced its heart as it arrived at the ton. Secing this you can scancely imagine the celerity of our movements. We were ashore in a moment. A fire was kindled, the secondary guide cut off the nose, and upper lip of the animal, instantly, and had it on the fire. What a feast! But we were predeut. We sat up all night, selecting the fat and tit-bits frying boiling, reasting and broiling, but earefully eating little at a time. Towards morning, we slept a few hours, absolutely careless of consequences. We knew that we had arrived in a land where game was plentiful, and where there were no foes superior to our

ater-

arka

meir-

r the

ent to

rated:

and.

work.

rest

of the

night,

after

untry:

noose,

diver.

irrela

round

eanoe.

view.

rd the

a hoz-

o our

p, we

what

n the

emed

Stoole

teav.

with

الو مد

nemy.

them:

l. but

number, to eppose us. Oct. 12.—We rose after sunrise, and began according to practice, to examine and prepare our guns. Prepared, mine, was placed against a tree; my duty, in course, was of the sulinary kind. George Merchant, my coadjutor, had gone to the river for water. He ran back seized his own gun, and intimated that a buil moose was swimming across the river towards the camp. We jumped to our arms—it so happened that my station was rearward. The energious animal was coming towards us, and not more than fifty paces off, his head and horns only above water. The sight was animating. Wheeler and some others fired at his head, but without effect. The extreme desire they had to porsess so noble a prey, probably caused a tremor of the hand, or that part of his body was impenetrable to our small balls, which is most likely. The moose turned and awam to the opposite bank. Having got to the verge of the river, his emerging was awaited. My ball struck precisely where it ought to kill. The huge animal rose the bank by several boggling leaps, but

seemedunknowing which way to run-We thought he would fall. Wheeler, and some others, getting into the canoes, pursued him by his blood half a mile. When Wheeler returned, he overloaded me with praises for the accuracy of the shot, and was confident that the deer was killed. We had no time to spare. We feasted till noon, and in the intermediate moments, culled the entrails for the fat: we even broke the benes, and extracted the marrow, under the full persuasion, that food of an ofly nature, is one of the strongest mainstays of human life. Of this principle, if we had a doubt, we were shortly afterwards most irrefragably convinced. We departed from our camp joyously, untortured by the fear of starving : our cance sunk deep by the weight of our venison. Running some miles and suddenly doubling a point, we saw a large grey wolf sitting on his haunches he was fired at, but the distance was too great, He escaped. Looking down the river we saw a moose swimming from the main to an island-it was soon brought down. It proved to be young of about 500 weight. Its cars and flanks were much form by the wolf. This prize constituted year in our larder. The choice parts were deposited in the caroes the residue was at the disposal of the wolf -

wis

slie

at.

lay

fre

for

in.

ab

Det Th

tre od.

Mit

ete

ha

tha

WO

ree Ma

WA.

The following morning, (October 13th,) embacking early, after noon we arrived at our first encamping ground on the "Dead river," in good health and spirits; though pallid and weak, for the want of substantial food in due quantity.

By this time the fat and marrow, of the animals we had killed, were exhausted, and our stock of salt had been long since expended. One who has never been deprived of bread and

salt, nor known the absence of cleaginous substances in his food, cannot make a true estimate of the invaluable benefits of such ingredients, in the sustentation of the budily frame; nor of the extremity of our cornered debility.

onghil

get-

blood

over-

I the

kil-

asted

. cul-

e the

e full

one of

f this

portly

We

tured

deep

some

saw E

e was

Te es

10050

t was

gwo?

much

eal in

ed in

sal of

em-

first

in'

reak.

tity.

ant-

our'

One

and

We ascended the bank, which is steep, and out fourteen feet high, carrying our baggage; arms and vanison, leisurely, by piecemeal. The cances as being tee heavy for our strength. were secured below, in the water, by withou . It was immediately concluded to preserve our provisions by farking. This operation is done by slicing the mest into thin stripe. Then driving four forks into the earth, in a square position, at the required distance perpendicularly, and laying poles from fork to fork, and poles athwart from pole to pole. A rock is thus made about four feet high, on which the sliced ment is laid: and smoke fires are made underneath. This duty was soon performed. We now began to look about us, and discuss the subject of our return to the army, which we had, before this time. persunded ourselves we should meet at this place. The non-appearance of the army and our distress, induced a conclusion that we were describ ed, and abandaned to a disastrous fate, the incvitable result of which would be, a sinking into eternity for want of food, for though we might have killed more deer, the vigaur of our bodies was so reduced that we were convinced that that kind of food, could not restore us to our wonted energy, and enable us to perform so rugs ged and long a march, as that to the frontiers of Maine. The notion of navigating the river, was scouted as a fallucy, because we did not passess a nufficient degree of bodily force, to bear the canoca across the twelve-mile-carrying-

place. As, in the case of the retreat of the army, we had determined to follow, it became requisite to firm the jerking, which would take. six days, to make it the more portable, for our feebleness, and preservable if we should have wet weather on the march. It was further concluded "That lieutenant Steele, Getchel and Wheeler, should immediately proceed on foot across the twelve-mile-carrying-place, to meet the army: If they did meet it, that they should return to us with supplies by the end of three days, but in all events to return." Haying no doubt of the honor of those gentlemen, the rest of the party remained, cheerfully jerking the meat. Now we experienced the full extent of a new species of starving. Having neither bread, nor salt, nor fat of any kind, every day we remained here, we became more and more weak and emaciated. We had plenty of ment, both fresh and dried, of which we ate four, five and six times a day, in every shape we had the means of dressing it. . Though we gorged the stomach, the appoints was unsatiated. Something like a diarrhose ensued, which contributed to the imbecility of our bodies. Bears oil would have made our venision savoury, but such an animal as a bear, we had as yet not seen in all our wanderings. On the evening of the fourth day, we hoked out for our absent companions with much heartfelt anxiety. They came not. In the morning of the next day, we consulted upon the question whether we should follow the army. A majority voted for staying a few days longer to complete the jerking. To shew you the great bodily weakness we were brought to, it may be proper to relate the fold lowing anecdote as more evineive of the fuet-

di

B

MA

B

1111

than him ather method which might be adopted to bring it fully to your minds. Surgeant Boyd (the strongest and stoutest man of the party, and perhaps of the army; and myself, taking our arms, descended into a cance, and passed the inverted the mouth of the prechebefore mensidned; intending to go to the next pond on the battrying place, there to meet, as we hoped, the ndvance bfother army but We staggered along through the plains falling levery new and their, if reductions but touched a twig on tuft of grass. Thus going his many we arrived at the edge of the meson begin which is indutioned as we necessipd the rhouse and which is one and a half, or two miles from the ponded Here my worthy friend Doyaly adabitatio proceeding ank down up one logg My beaty inchars of exeruciating griefy must taken beride thing endervoring to infuscion fortant courage into his manty minde. itemas sinevalu, to The debility of his body had dismined his courageout soul. Every art in my powersum exercised to induce him to pass the ide he would not listen to me on that subject. Melancholy of the desperate kind oppressed me, Cominced that the army had retreated, a prognoutication resulted formy mind, that we should the dieses mero dibbility in these wilds. We sat an lidure achiblength we agreed to return to our bamp, though it was yet early in the afternoon. Our companions were pleased to see us, thinking bur forming somson; indicated good news, but a gloom of desperation followed. As a last ifficit to save our diver motall agreed to pass the river the next merning and follow the army. which we were now assured. had refured to Fost: Western Bach one put into his kansatt. The Ronor had restored our falaca a spinite that

n foot o meet should three lemen, orfally he full ng neievery re and enty of we ale. ape we who we tiated Bears . y, but of seem of the t com-They y, we

should

taying

To

were he fol-

fuet

he are

me re

hors.

is much of our markish fold, marking ould nonbeniently carry. " ofmice area at with the grief us

SE.F.A.B.

m

of

th

46

tir

O

sti

wh

be

kn

BTO

10

wit

iou

LW

arc

in :

ple

rel

Qn:

Ah

Oct. 17. We started early, passed the river, but from mere inability to earny our cances, left them behind use at the bank of the creak. Marching forward, as fast as our feeble dimis would tearry our of when two camoutes the dag where Boyd had scuted himself, we were filled with extatic joy to observe on the farmide of the bogen party of piencers ferming designaway for the passage of the avery to Our stress doubled we passed the bug with considerable speed. Our wan and baggard faces and metgre bodies, and the moustrous beards of my companions, who had angleded to chargin ranor with thom; seemed to atrike a deep sprious into the heart of the pioneers. They gave una little of their food but what exhiberatellous more, was the information, that major Febicer with the advanced-guard, lay at the next pond. We urged forward as fast as we could he Aprix. ing at his fire a little before my company an incapacity to stand compolled me to site likebi ger, in a hurried manner asked who we were? and from whence we carre I A few words as plained the mystery and leaves of our die tress. A glistening tear stand in this brave alldier's eye. As it were with a sadden and involuntary motion and much tonderness he handed me his wooden canteen (which contained the last spirits in the army,) from me it passed to Cunningham, who had just come up, the most ghastly and way-worth algure in nature, from bimuit went round to the nest, who arrived gradually, but slowly. The heart of Febiger seemed overjoyed at the relief he had and could afford at The liquor had restored our fainting spirits, but

*** 493

river.

, beft

renk

limbs

o dej

Alled

ideiof

iows!

THE

6 hmy

PRICE

waint'b

- WERE

eth-rus

obiget

pondi

Aprile

HYY CO

. Kebb

merb?

e dis

بأله خار

· ih YO

e last

Cun

himrit

nally.

OVER-

s, but

this was not enough for his generosity to exhibit. He requested us to take seats around the fire, and wait the boiling of his kettle, which was well replenished with pork and dumpling This was all devoted to our use, accompanied by an open heartedness and the kindest expressions of interest for our sufferings, and regard for our perseverance in our duty as military men. This meal to all of us seemed a renewal of life. It was accustomed food. Febiger, ere this time, was unknown to us, but in the prouess of events, he acquired our esteem and entire confidence as a friend and a real soldier. Our more immediate and intimate friends, were still beyond the pond, but coming forward. Byand-by Morgan came, large, a commanding aspeet, and stentorian voice. He wore leggins, and a cloth in the Indian style. His thighs, which were exposed to view, appeared to have been lacerated by the thorns and bushes. He knew our story from Steele and Wheeler, and greeted us kindly. We now found ourselves at home, in the bosom of a society of brave mon. with whom we were not only willing, but anxious to meet the brunts of war. This was the twenty-sixth day we had been absent from the army. In the evening we resumed our stations in our respective messes. It was now fully explained to us, why Steele had not brought us relief. He had met the advance of the army on the Kennebeck side of the carrying-place. Always alert and indefatigable; when any duty was to be done: the labours of the men in earrying boats, barrels of flour, &c. were intolerable, and required the strength and athletic exertions of the officers, and particularly such as lieutenant Steele, to enliven them in their duty In bearing a heavy burdens over rugged ground, he fell and sprained or dislocated his shoulder. Notwithstanding this accident, he had sent as supplies, but the bearers, either from cowardice or other cause, exert came mearus. Getchel and Wheeler had other duties to attend to they were mader damediate commande ... We also discovered from Steeles that Clifton and McKonkey, soon after we left them, had desent od their post, carrying all they could on their hacks, to meet the army of the dastardly vices of the latter, prevailing over the known code rage, good sense, ambindate age of the forimer: nothing occurs to me contributory to the fame of these men afterwards. The first was an invalid the latter a chitiff coward. In your seanning the characters of mon, which you will be compelled to do in your own defence, in the course of your lives, it will be a good general rule fer you to adopt That whether you be in the company of military men-scholars men of the law-legislators, &c. &c. in shorts percons of any profession or class, if you find a person very luganoious dragging the conversation to himself, and in a dictatorial way taking the lead; but more especially if his talks of his own prowess deep reading causes he has gained, eloquence, &c. &c. ant still more se in the party boasts of wealth of meestry, & Insthic first instance, without hesitation, set such w person down im your memory as in brangadition, a more puffer, until you candiquire further for press to the contrary There are to ingulatoriu edge, exceptions to this meneral rules but fine in numbery particularly in the military claim. M. Konkey was of the pulling sout, and there on least minister of a color of the instruction

th

D

de

m

le

An

never was a more consummate scoundrel and coward.

and deg

e from

estend

L. Allo

n and

esept

their

vices

COU!

e fre-

to this

st was

T YOUR

ou wilt

in the

engral

rou be

men

SAPETA

find o

Yer In

gains

distro

ich

division

mi foc

HOME

October 18th.-Now we turned our faces towards the north. Having rejoined our messmates, enjoying substantial food and warm tents. we soon recruited a good degree of strength, and our former gaiety of temper and hilarity returned to us. We accompanied the army, and became a kind of guides in minute matters, for the paths and carrying places we had sufficiently developed, for captain Ayres and his pioneers, by strong blazing and snagging of bushes, so that he might proceed in perfect security, in the performance of the duties of his office. The three companies of riflemen under Morgan took up our old encamping ground on the " Dead river," during the afternoon of the following day.

Oct. 19th & 20th.—Here we lay encamped for several days, waiting the arrival of the rear cf the New England troops: they came up hourly. During our stay here, it pleased me internally, to observe, that Morgan adopted certain rules of discipline, absolutely necessary to the state we were in, but discordant with the wild and extravagant notions, of our private men.* Powder and ball, particularly the first, to us riflemen was of the first consequence. At Cambridge the horns belonging to the men, were filled with an excellent rifle powder-which, when expended, could not be replaced in Canada by any powder of an equal quality. The men had got into a habit of throwing it away at every triffing object. Upon our return from the Chaudiere, this circumstance raised disgust in us:

See Note IV.

for we had been studiously careful of our ammunition, never firing but at some object which would give us the means of substitence. Though we drew our loads every morning, from a foar of the dampaess of the atmosphere, yet the ball and powder were never lost. Our bullet serews brought the first out with ease, and it was recast—the latter was earefully returned to the horn, where, if moist, it soon became dry. The principal of Morgan's rules were, that there should be no straggling from the camp; and no firing without authoritative permission. Reasonable as these injunctions were, they were opposed. Being young and my friend Steele absent, a whisper of approbation did not fall from me, which, in my subordinate station, might have been indelicate. It was left to the energy of Morgan's mind, and he conquered. During our resting here, Arnold, accompanied by Stoele and some excellent boatmen, proceeded to the head of the river. The rifle corps preceded the main body of the army, both by land and water. The boats, which were heavily laden with baggage and provisions, took in no more men than re necessary to navigate them, that is, three to a boat. The remainder of the army marched by land, the river being generally the guide.

Here, my dear children, permit me to give you the genuine character of my friend, general Simpson, whom you all know personally. He was among my earliest and best friends. He was then as apparently eccentric, as he is at this time: there is no obvious difference in his manners between the two periods. As an officer, he was always active and keen in the performance of his duty. Hard was the service; but his

\$ 63.60

heart was soft to his friend. Simpson invited his messmate aboard his boat, being still some what fachle from our late privations; the invitation was gladly accepted.

r am-

which

hough

a fear

se ball

eword

AB TO-

to the

there

s-and

Rea

ere on-

ele ab-

from

at have

rgy of

ng our

ele and

e head

ed the

water.

h beg-

n than

three

arched

ide. iye you

reneral

L He

He

at this

man-

er he

mance ut his Oct 21st. We such arked Having lieut. Simpson for a steepsman, and John Tidd and James Daugherty; as beatmen, we went guily on for that and the next day; able to lead any boat in the river.

October 22d.—On the evening of this second day, we encamped on a bank eight or sine feet high, at a place where we had nested when as cending the river the first time. In the evening a most heavy torrent of rain fell upon us, which continued all night. Having new a good tent over our heads, the incovenience was not much felt. We slept soundly. Towards mot ning, we were awaked by the water which flowed in upon us from the river. We fied to high ground.

Oct. 23d. When morning came the river presented a most frightful aspect: it had rises at least eight foot, and flowed with terrifying pidity. None but the most strong and active boatmen entered the boats. The army marched on the south side of the river, making large of enits to avoid the overflowings of the intervale or bettom lands. This was one of the most fatiguing marches we had as yet performed, though the distance was not great in a direct line. But having no path and being necessitated to climb the steepest hills, and that without food. for we took none with us, thinking the boats would be near us all day. In the evening we arrived at the fall of four feet, which was mentioned when ascending the river. Alas! all the boats of the army were on the opposite side of the river. The pitch of the fall made a dread-

ful noise, and the current ran with immense velocity. We sat down on the bank serely pinched by hunger, looking wistfully towards our friends beyond the torrent, who were in possession of all the provisions, tents and camp equipage. Convinced however, that the most adventurous boatman would not dare the passage, for the sake of accommodating any of us. We were mistaken. There were two men. and only two who had skill and courage to dare it. Need lieutenant Simpson on an occasion like this, be named; he, accompanied by John Tidd, ontered his empty boat. What skill in boatmanship! what aptitude with the paddle was here exhibited. The principal body of the water run over the middle of the fall, and created a foaming and impetuous torrent, in some measure resembling, at this particular time, of a very high freshet, that of the Oswego-falls, which had been known to me ere this. The river was about 150, or 200 yards in breadth, counting on the increase of water by the rains. The force of the central current, naturally formed considerable eddies at each side of the river. close under the pitch. Simpson new disclosed his amazing skill. Though there was an eddy, even that was frightful, he came by its mean nearly under the pitch, and trying to obtain an exact start, failed. The stream forced bis boat down the river, but he recovered and brought it up. Now we, who were trembling for the fate of our friend, and anxious for our own accommodation, began to fear he might be drawn under the pitch. Quick, almost in a moment. Simpson was with us. He called in his loud voice to Robert Dixon, James Old (a messmate) and myself to enter the boat - We entered im180 Ye-

pinch-

S OUT

n pos

camp

e pas-

. and

are it.

d, entman-

here

water

falls.

The

adth.

rains. formriver,

losed

eddy,

mean

in an

boat

ught

com-

TAWN

ent.

loud

atel

im

modilately. He pushed off; attempting the star? favor of the hither culdy, which was the main thing we falled. Refurning to the shore. hungry, and anxious to be with their compans. Simpson told them lie could not carry more with safety, and would return for thein: Henry M'Annaly, a tall Irishman, who could not from experience, comprehend the danger, jump four other inconsiderate men. The countent were intimate. O God, said lie, man we shall all die." They would not recede. Again we approached the pitch; it was horrible. The batteaux swam deep, almost ungovernable by the paddle. Attempting again to comy the departure—we failed. The third trial was made : it moseculat. As fighting we darted athwest the river. Simpson with his paddle, governed the stern. The worthy Tidd in the how. Dixon and myself, our guns stuck in the raffing of the batteaux, but without puddles, sat in the stern next to Shipson. Mr. Old was in the bow hear Fidd. Henry MeAnnaly was adjoining Mr. Cid. The other men sat between the stern and how. Sturpson called to the men in the bow, to lay held of the birch bushes the boat struck the shore foreith, they caught hold, M'Annaly in particulary (this was in the tail of the eddy,) but like children, their holds slipped, at the pally spot where we could have been saved, for the boat had been judiclously and safely brought up. Letting go their holds, the bow came round to the stream, and the stern struck the shore. Simpson, Dixon, and myself, now caught the bushes, but being by this time thrown live the

ourrents the strongth of the water made the wither, as so many straws is our hands. The stern again swung round; the bow come again ashore. Mr. Old, Tidd, and M'Annaly, and the rest, sprung to the land to save their lives. Doing this, at our cost, their beels forced the boat across the current. Though we attempted to steady it, the boat swagged. In a moment of ter, at thirty feet off shore, it being broad side to the current, turned; borne under, in spite of all our force, by the fury of the stream. The boat upsetting, an expression, as going into the water, fell from me, "Simpson we are roing to heaven." My fall was head foremost. Simpson came after me-his heels, at the depth of fifteen feet or more, were upon my head and neck; and those grinding on the gravel. We rose nearly together, your father first my friend followed. The art of swimming, in which, I thought myself an adept, was tried, but it was a topey-turvy business. the force of the water threw me often heels-over-head,

In the course of this voyage, after a few hundred yards. Simpson was at my side, but the ferce of the stream, prevented the exertion of swimming; yet the impetuosity of the current kept us up. It drove us toward the other side of the river, against a long ridge of perpendicular rocks of great extent: Luckily in the course of some hundred yards, the current changed, and brought us perforce to the north side of the river. Floating along with my head just above water—prayers in sincere penitence having been attered, a host's crew of the eastern men, handed me a pole. It was griped as by the hand of death—but griped the pole remained to me. The strength of water was such, that the boat would

de the The eggin nd tho Dos e boat ted to ent of denide pite of The to the ion to Simupth of d and e mose friend ich. I it was water Tal ill ut the ion of rrent ide of celar ree of f the above been hand. nd. of The ou le

evitably chave upset oif the bostman had kent bis hold i Angilineo toff the decinformed mei that my companion in misfortune I had shored the same future! Histogrand into the bosom of my Sariour, min even bedding beloaden theutleath appeared to med a hard one; semibility in a reat depositionsock mei Driving with the our reat come handreds of yards more, the most milpaülo forlings rocellasteits: vins the striking of my sbream against discrebts ar drawl soubstance. My: Hends a small a bount twaters is Breathing oneits ed; at the rame monget Simpson raised his hundred of the water, his gold intell hat on II breite &Oh!" neither of uncould have crept out we should have there dieds but for the assist takeo as Edward Carinnaugha andrish mangan excellent soldiers who was designated in the bompany by the appellution of "Honest Ned." Page sing from the lower part of the river he happen. od to come to the eddy, at the instant of time my broug struck. He oried out "Labitatehung is this good and instantly dragged me out of the water. Simpson immediately appearing, he did him the manb good office. Disping on the cart porháps twenty minutes thá impor pouning from un. Roused we went to ito But all exchilenkes out for Dixon, call hearts were waiting for his lessy It was knowe be could not swim, but none of as bould recollect whather he had dropped into the water or had adhered to the best. La some time we had the inexpressible pleasure of Dixon in course empany. He had stuckets the nide of the boat, which ledged on agreet pile of drift wood some miles below, and in this way he was saved. Arriving at the campusit friends and a large fire preparad, posticidally for our

energian dans and the think the contraction is most agreeable. My two friends in distross whose selecthings was principally wooling telt genelof my private disaster, My leather breaches attached closely and soldly to the skin. Modes ty probibited a disclarare. The sensore pain or inconvenience indich awae observed by array benieviji caused mutinguiry. Immediately the bropoblic were all aid stails appoint poloite ang Simpsodywise shownuch mahilarated by party cohivgbook: glace and the common an forerise with the During this thine is perhaps till how and two of a locky many all receives were din my hand almost in scontinued fuittiden The laught of the companyi wasi againat magabatah batah batah stoleakly. The fellowing instraings (Optabore 24) pon-souted ins with many difficulties passite auremy horizontith as pound at pouders and mysponels with moverty bullets) twent makermed by the viaters: though around in model in the nouneral his that and only most provious viller A wanting, the world appeared to be wilderested. Dis-numbed, any ineignification pressed strongly eq-my mindedishess seemed to follow of course. Withdut the Aemolic of defenor, we hand flations we with the constant of the c then buck cofe power hand subject at the thouself bpppositional Younging your fither was phis will was oppressed. Blo betters with the itwalldi way doondfully and without sarme, she would not proceeds i Comfort come to me in the white of Steutemantio way general Nindiolai then at Hondricker budlowhad two hatescheopreseded me one but what was mare to my purpose in diam's destroyed in the state of the state of

intronis

of paja

PRESIDE

dyidho

thedig

our con

Plater

oth: to

and dres

DE COTO-

pienkly.

) pour

dremy

poneb

by The

PROPERTY.

psacio

ahing,

J' Biel-

gly req

OUTSE.

ations

ell by

and of

S. BCho

walldi

would

shape

the levelid's wished to dispese of their rifles. With the assistance of Nichols and Simpson, a hargain was struck with a person called Willian Reynolds, or Russels, of our company; who was miserably sick, and returned in the beats. Money was out of the question, an order upon my father, dated at this place, for the price of twelve dollars was accepted, and afterwards in due time, paid honorably. This gun was short, about as balls to the pound, the stock shattered greatly, and worth about 40 shiftlings. Nootssity has no law. Never did a gun, ill as its appearance was, shoot with greater cortainty, and where the ball touched, from its siso, it was sure to kill. This observation, trifling as it may seem, ought to induce government to adopt game of this size, as to length of barrel, and size of ball. There are many reasons to enferce this opinion. We departed from this place, without any material occurrence, and went rapidly ferward.

Somewhat hughable ensued on the morning of the 27th of Dotober, near the Arst pond, at the head of the river. The Vivginians (though it is not probable that any of the efficers, excepting one) had taken up the idea, that they were our superiors in every military qualification, and ought to lead. Hendricks, though the oldest commissioned officer of the rifle courpanies, was still the youngest man. For the sake of peace and good order, he had not assented to, but merely acquicaced in Morgan's assumption of the command of our corps, as the elder person. Those men, who were clever and brave, were just such in that behalf, as we were ourselves: but a Mr. Heath, who was blind of an cyc, a lieutenant of Morgan's, reconcil to

F

think, that all others were inferior to those of the "assist dominion." We had a hard morning's pucking, when coming up to the first poud, at the head of the "Dend fiven," we saw Heath before us. Observing to Simpson, "push him," we went up with much force; poor Heath laboring as a slave, to keep his place, Tidd and Dougherty, felt my spirit, as much as Simpson did. At the moment of our passing, for we went up on the outside of him, towards the mid-dle of the current, his pole stade upon which he gave us a few hearty curson. Entering the lake, the boat under my guidance and information, steered directly for the passage to the second lake. Humphreys (Morgan's first lieutenant) a brave and most amiable man, whom we highly esteemed, was in a boat far to the left. searching for a passage. Simpson, at my instance, hailed him to come on. He answered there was no passage there, alluding to the place we steered for. Encouraging my friend to go in the deception Humphreys by under was toon discovered. The creek was deep and serpentine, and the country around, for a considerable distance, a flat. A log brought down by the last freshet, lay across the stream, so as to give to a stranger the idea, that the mouth of the creek, was merely a nook of the lake. Setting the log affect, as was easily done, the boat

October 28. Continuing rapidly, for now we had no carrying, nor marking of trees, there being plenty of water, the evening was spent at the foot of that mountain, called the Heighth-of-land. This was a day of severe labor. The navigation of the Chaudiere, being so far at our information went, represented to the cap

ese of

morn-

pout

Heath

him."

th la-

dd and

mpson

or we

e mid-

which

ng the

forma-

the se-

euten-

om we

e left.

my in-

swered

place

to go

was

sider-

wa by

uth of Sete boat

DW WO

there

ent at

ghth-

AF DE

CHE

The

tains, Hondricks and Smith, as very danger ous, they, to save their men, concluded to carry, over the hill, but one boat for each of their companies. This resolution was easily accomplished. Morgan, on the other hand, determined to carry over all his boats. It would have made your heart ache, to view the intolerable labors his fine fellows underwent. Some of them, It was said, had the flesh worn from their shoulders, even to the bone. The men aid it; but by this time an antipathy against Morgan, as too strict a disciplinarian had arisen. On the following day, (October 59th.) the army, disjointed as was our corps, at least Hondrick's and Smith's, encamped on the plain, on the bank of the Chaudiere. Morgan afterwards took his station near us. Here it first became generally known, that Enoc had returned from the twelventle terrying place, with 500 men, large stock of provisions, and the medicios chest. It dimped our spirits much, but our commander somecived, it was better to proceed than return. We were about a hundred miles from the frontier of Canada, but troble that divtance from that of New England. Our previ-sions were exhausted. We had no meat of any kind. The flour which remained, so far as I know, was divided fairly and equally, among the whole of the troops, the riffmen shared five pints of flour per man. During the night and the ensuing morning, the flour was baked into five cakes per man, under the ashes, in the way of Indian bread. of On the 30th of October, we set forward. The

men were told by the officers "that order would

not be required in the march, each one must

"nut the best foot foremost." The first day's

march was alosed by a charming sleep on firbranchies. The gentlemen of our meet lay tegether, covering themselves, with the blankets of each one. My memory does not serve, to say, that any stir was made by any one, during the night. Happening to be the first who awaked, in the morning, the blanket was suddenly thrown from my head, but what was my surprise to find that we had lain under a cover of at least four inches of snew. We scarcely had risen and had our kettle on the fire, when our drummer, (we had no buglet,) John Shacfer, same alipshed to our fire, complaining, that all his cakes had been stolen from him. A more wretched figure was scarpely ever beheld. Howas purblind. This circumstance, though he was my townsman, and acquainted with me from my carlidet infancy, was yet unknown to me until this last march, ascending the "Bendmyer? commenced. My station in the line of march, which was in the single file, (or Indian. as it was then called,) was next to the captain; the drummer followed. Here it was his defect of sight was most effectually shows Smith was lithsome and quick afoot, as we all were, (except poor Shaffer.) In the course of this foilsome march, without a path, many deep ravince presented, ever these lay many legs, fullen perhaps many years before. The captain took the log, professing it to a descent of 20 or 20 feet into the guink below, which at times was quite shrunt. Eollowing me, Shaeffer would frequently, drum and all, tumble headleng into the abyss. Mis misfortunes in this way, for he was a laughing stock, excited contempt in the soldiers, but in me compassion. Often, berequired my aid. On this latter occasion, our * See Note V.

ta

of

th

00

60

or

nie

tag

WE

of

Po

PP

on

jt ·

W

wh

tre

to

he

an

(8

an

AS.

m

kettle, boiling a bleary, which was no other than flour and water, and that without salt, my solicitations prevailing, the mess gave him a tin cup full of it. He received from me my third cake. This man, blind, starving, and almost maked, here his drum (which was unharmed by all its jostlings) safely to Quebec, when many other hale men died in the wilderness.

7 to-

keis

t, to

ring

wak-

1800-

er of

hod

Dill

that

ough

hi mad

rn: to

ne of

dian

tain:

efect

mith

Vene.

this

n ra-

feel

otain

O or

was

into

r ho

the

Te.

OIL.

This morning, the first of November, breakfasting on our bleary, we took up the line of march through a flat and boggy ground. About tan o'clock A. M. we arrived, by a narrow neek of land at a marsh which was appalling. It was three fourths of a mile over, and povered by a cout of ice, half an inch thick. Here Simpson concluded to halt a short time for the stragglers or maimed of Hendrick's and Smith's companies to come up. There were two women attached to those companies, who arrived before we commenced the march. One was the wife of serieant Grier, a large, virtuous and reapectable woman. The other was the wife of a private of our company, a man who larged upon every occasion. These women being arrived it was presumed that all our party were up. We were on the point of entering the marsh when some one eriod out " Warner is not here. Another said he had " sat down sick under a tree, a few miles back." His wife begging us to wait a short time, with tears of affection in her eyes, ran back to her husband. We tarried an hour. They came not. Entering the pend, (Simpson foremost,) and breaking the ice here and there with the buts of our gune and feet, as occasion required, we were soon waist deep in the mud and water. As is generally the case with youths, it came to my mind, that a better F 2

path might be found than that of the more elderly guide. Attempting this, in a trice the water cooling my armpits, made me gladly return into the file. New Mrs. Grier had got before me. dig mind was tumbled, yet astonish ed, at the exertions of this good woman. Her clothes more than white light, sho waded before me to the firm ground. No one so long as she was known to m, dared to influently disrespectful idea of her. Her husband, who was an excellent soldier, was on duty in Headricks' bout, which had proceeded to the discharge of the lake with lieutenant McClelandy Aeriving at firm ground, and waiting again for our compahiens, we then set off, and in a march of several miles, over a strubby and flat plain, arrived at a river flowing from the east into the Chaudiere lake. This we passed in w batters, which the produce of tolonol Arnold had stationed here) for our recommodation, otherwise we must have swant the stream which was wide and leep. In a short time we came to agother river Sowing from the same quarter, still deoper and without time the former. Here we found a pattonic, under the superintendency of capt. Digitaries, is which we passed the rivers. We skirted the river to its mouth, their passed along the margin of the lake to the outlet of Chaudiers, where we encamped with a heterogeneous mass of the army. It was soon perceived, that the French term Chardiere, was most aptly applied to the river below us. Indeed every part of it, which came under our view, until we arrived at the " first house" in Canada, inight well be termed a caldron or builer, which is the import of its French mame. It is remarkable of this river, and which to me, distinguishes it from

13.

to

titi

to

tei.

int

Th

tin

me

 the

THE

Tell'

Her

form

etful

teel-

bout.

the at

npa-

d at

liere

mtist

and iver

'a o'l

batt

111.

the

cro

the

Red

all others I had soon, that for 60 or 70 miles, it is a continued capid, without any apparent gap or passage; even for a cause. Every bout we put into the river, was stove in one part or other of it. Captala Morgan lost all his beats, and the life of a much valued soldier. With difficulty he saved his own life and the trensure committed to his care. Arnold, accompanied by Steele, and John M. Taylor, and a few others, in a boat, were in the advance of the army. He may have descended in a boat, it is most likely he did.

On the morning of the 2d of Nevember, we pet off from the Chandiere lake, and hungered, as to my own particular, almost to death. What with the suplies to Shaoffer, and my own appetite, food of any kindy with me, had become a monentity. My own sufforings, in the two saccooling marches, from particular causes, were more than ordinarily neveror My mocka sins had, many days since, been worn to shreds and cast acide a My choos, though they had been well wed and hitherto headk together, now began to give way, and that in the very worst part (the openight seath in the heet!) For one to save bis 416, must keep his station in the rank. The aroment that was lost, as mainre and reason distate, the following soldier assumed his place. Thus, ence thrown ont of the file, the unfordinate wretch must await the passage of many men, until a chasm, towards the rear, happened to open for his admission. This explanation all answer some questions which you might saturally put. Why did you not sew it? Why middle the street arrived private and to be

June 26th, 1809. John M. Taylor tells me, that

was the

de Fi

him

DOS

best

dis i

talk

Jun

kno

Ros

ties

PA

"D

. 00

of 1

DI BE

the

H

Her

and

623

tion

we.

did you not tie the shoe to your foot? If there had been awl, and thread, and strings at command which there was not for the causes above stated, one dared not have done either. as the probable consequences would consuc "Death by hunger in a dreary wilderness." For man when thrown out of society is the most helpless of God's creatures. "Hence you may form a conception of the intolerable labour of the march. Every step taken the heel of the foot slipped out of the sheet to recover the position of the foot in the shoe, and at the same time to stride: was hard labour, and exhausted my strength to an unbearable degree. You must remember that this march was not performed on the level surface of the parade, but over precipitous hills, deep gullies, and even without the path of the vagrant savage to guide us. Thus we proceeded till towards mid day. the pale and meagre looks of my companions. tottering on their feeble limbs, corresponding with my own. My friend Simpson, who saw my enfeebled condition and the cause, provailed with the men to rest; themselves a few minutes. Bark, the only succedancum for twine, or leathor, in this miserable country, was immediately procured and the shoe bound tightly to the foot. Then marching hastily, in the course of an hour or more, we came within view of a tremendous cataract in the river, from 12 to 20 feet high. The horror this sight gave us, fearing for the safety of our friends in the boats, was aggravated, when turning the point of a steep crage. we met those very friends, having lost all but their lives, citting around a fire on the shore. Oh God! what were our sensation ! Pour McCleland, first lieutenant of Hondrick's as

te

mà

905 er

ne.

8-27

ost

BAY

of

the

DO-

me

ited

Fon

en

but

Ven

ride

lay

one.

line

iled

itea.

ath

tely

tour

igh.

the

OFC.

Pont

for whose accommodation the boat was most particularly carried across the mountain, was was not andible, placing my our close to his lips, the word he attered marcely articulate, was, a Farewell." Simpson, who leved him, guve him half of the pittance of food which he will possessed; all I would was a tear. The short, but melancholy story, of this gentleman, so far as it hat come to my knowledge, may be detailed in a few words. He had resided on the Juniata at the time he was commissioned. My knowledge of him commenced in the camp wear Boston. He was endowed with all those qualities which win the affections of men. Open, prave, sincere, and s lever of truth. On the "Dead river." the variable weather brought on a cold which affected his lungs. The tonderness of his Priends, conducted him safely, though much reduced, to the foot of the mountain, at the head of the Dead river." Hence he was borne in a litter across the incumataln by man. If you had seen the young, yet venerable capt. Hendricks, bearing his shore of this loved and patriotic burthen, agree the plain to see tion, to wards him. From our camp, Neckland was transported, in the boat, so the place where we found him. The crow, conducting the bout, though worthy men and well appreciated with meh kind of mavigation, knew nothing of this They descended, unaware of the pitel re thom, until they had got nearly into the of the falls Here, tuckily, a rock preboat to lodge. Now the crew, with great and danger, Bore their wafortungle lieut.

to the shere, where we found him. We passed on, fearful for our own lives. Coming to a long sandy beach of the Chaudiere. for we sometimes bad and: some men of our company were observed to dart from the file, and with their nails, tear out of the sand, roots which they esteemed estable, and sig them raw, even without wash ing. Languid and woe-begone, as your father ves, it could not but create a smile, to observe the whole line watching with "Argus eyes," the motions of a few mon, who know the indications in the sand of those roots. The knowing one aprung, half a dozen followed, he who grabbed it, eat the root instantly. Though hunger arg ed, it was fur from me to contend in that way with powerful men, such to those wore. Stroket often occurred.

During this day's march, fabout 10 or 11, A. M.) my shoe having given away again, we came to a fre, where were some of captain Thayer, or Tephane's mean Simpson was in front, trudging ofter, slipshed and tired, I set down on the ond of a long log, against which the pro was builts absolutely falating with hanger and fatigue, my gun standing between my know Senta ing myself, that very not gave a met to the hetanalt a way, as to spill two thirds of its contents. At the mement a large man sprung to his gan, and pointing it towards me he threatened to shoot. It exceted no fear; his life was with much more certainty in my power. Death would have been a welcome visitor at improve soon made us friends. Coming to their fre they gave me a cap of their broth. A table speenful; was all that was tasted. It had a recensish have, and was said to be that of a boat.

This tho t Winds: ing TAGET mou ly, e fire, its ? recei nity. as te food. out r the hand 11688 of a deno of m bedi ed p pany voice of th the i del This lons the that-

migt

fy th

me t

Ty.

okin.

away

ed

DE

105

ob-

18.

ed

101

PYC

he

bina

nö

hed

LQU

Δ,

mê

er,

the

Väs

6

MEN

in

on-

es-

PRE

ath

30H

TO.

ble

d w

This was instantly known to be untrue, from the taste and smell. It was that of a dog. He was a large black Newfoundland dog, belong ing to Thuyer, and very fat. We left these merry fellows, for they were actually such. maugre all their wants, and marching quickly towards evening encamped! We had a good fire, but no food. To me the world had lost its charms. Gladly would death have been received as an auspicious horald from the Divinity. My privations in every way, were such as to produce a willingness to die. Without food, without clothing, to keep me warm, without money, and in a deep and devious wilderness. the idea occurred, and the means were in my hands, of ending existence. The God of all goodness inspired other thoughts. One principal cause of change (ander the fortering hand of Providence) in my sentiments, was the jovial hilarity of my friend Simpson: At night, warming our bodies at an immense fire, our computriots joined premisonausly around to unimate the company, he would sing "Plato," his sonerous voice gave spirit to my heart, and the morality of the song, consolution to my mind. In truth del, added strength and vigour to our nerves. This evening it was, that some of our companfons, whose storiaghs had not received food, for the last forty-eight hours, adopted the notion. that leather, though it had been manufactured. might be made pulatable food, and would grafffy the appetite. Observing their discourse, to me the experiment became a matter of ouriesity. They washed their mockasing of mooreskin, in the first place, in the river, scraping away the diet and sand, with great care. These

were brought to the kettle and beiled a considerable time, under the vague, but consolatory hope, that a mucilage would take place. The holling over, the poor follows chawed the leather, but it was leather still; not to be macerated. My teeth, though young andigood, succeeded so hottary. Discounding and weary, we passed the night.

OX

th

100

in

eu

ear

fire

of

and

thi

Sm

tho

ent

as of

be 2 h

ho

arr

wh

dee

hit

It-

day

riv

F

November 3d: We arose amly, hanger impolling and mershed rapidly . After 1905, on a point on the bank of the sinen sometone pretenderty he descried the "first house?" ton miles off: Not long after another discorned a linet coming towards us, and turning a point of land-presently, all perceived outtle driving up the shower These circumstances, game evancion to a feeble buzza of jpy, from those who may these obsectal and colivering sights. We were now treading a wide and stony beach of the river. Smith, our captain, who at this moment happened to be in company, aloted with the presperhaps thoughtleady, said to me, "take this lieuwy." It was gladly necessed to Opening the paper, which had been weatly folded there appassed a hand's broadth and length of bacon fut. of an inch thick; thoughtlessly, it was enten reedily, instentise to all former sule, and thanks to Gad, did me no harm. Here it was that for the first time, Agren Burr, a most mighle youth of twenty, came in my view. Hie then was a endet. It will require a most poment evidence, to convince my mind, that, he ever intended any ill to his country of late years, by his various speculations. Though differing in political opinion from him, no reason has as yet bonn laid before me, to induce a belief, that he

was traiterous to his country. However, take this as the wayward ideas of a person totally excluded from a knowledge of the secrets of the cabinet; who was somewhat attentive to its operations, so far as newspaper information can elucidate.

We marched as hastily as our wearied and feeble limbs could admit, hoping seen to share in something like an abysinian feast. The ourvatures of the river, had deceived us in the calculation of distance. Li was many hours ere we eame to the place of slaughter. We found a fire, but no provision, except a small quantity of oaten meal, resembling in grit, our chopped rye. Simpson warmed some of this in water. and ate with gout. To me it was nauseous: this may have been owing to the luncheon from Smith's hoard. The French men told us, that those who preceded, had devoured the very entrails of the eattle. One of the eastern menas we came to the fire, was gorging the last bit of the colon, half rinsed-half broiled. It may he said, he ate with pleasure, as he tore it as a hungry dog would tear a haunch of meat. We soon encamped for the night, cheered by the hope of succor.

the

MARC

new

Her.

this

Mut,

esten

and

IN CHE

mast

Henri

OVER

. by

November 4th. About two o'clock, P. M. we arrived at a large stream coming from the cast, which we ran through, though more than middeep. This was the most chilling bath we had hitherto received: the weather was raw and cold. It was the 17th, and the harshest of my birthdays. Within a few hundred yards of the river, stood the "first house" in Canada: we approached it in extacy, sure of being relieved from death, by the means of famine. Many of our compatriots were unaware of the state of the st

bei

vie

nig

Dre

he

tru

mo

be

in his

wi

on

Nu

WI

ex

wh

its

the

bu

ly

19

RU

it

ra

by

me

ou

810

fal

which arises from andden repletion. The active spirit of Arnold, with such able assistants as John M. Taylor and Steele, had laid in a great stock of provisions. The men were furious weracions, and inequiable. Three starvations had taught me wisdom. My friends took my advice. But, notwithstanding the irrefragable arguments the officers used to meure moderation, the men were outrageous upon the subject, they bed no comprehension of such reasoning. A Pennsylva-nian German of our company, a good and orderly soldier, who, from my affection towards him, I watched like another doctor Pedro Positive; yet all representation and reusening on my part, had no influence. Boiled beef, but bread, potatoes, boiled and roasted, were gormandized without stint. He seemed to defy death, for the mere anjoyment of present gratification, and died two days after. Many of the men sickened. If not much mistaken, we lost three of our company, hy their imprudence on this occasion. The immediate extension of the stomach by food, after a lengthy fast, operates a more sudden extinction of life, than the total absence of aliment. At this place, we for the first time, had the pleasure of seeing the worthy and respectable Indian. Natanis, and his brother Sabatis, with some others of their tribe, (the Abenequia) Lioutenant Steele told us, that when he first arrived, Natanis came to him, in an abrupt but friendly manner, and gave him a cordial shake by the hand, intimating a previous personal knewledge of him. When we came, he approached Cunningham, Boyd, and myself, and shook bands in the way of an old acquaintance. We now learned from him, that on the evening when we first encamped on the "Dead-river," (September 29th) in our first ascension, he lay within view of our camp, and so continued daily and nightly to attend our voyage, until the path presented, which led threatly into Canada. This he took; to the question, "Why did you not speak to your friends? He readily answered, and truly, " You would have killed me." This was most likely, as our prejudices againt him had been most strongly excited, and we had no limit in our orders, as to this devoted person. He. his brother Sabatis, and seventeen other Indians. the nephews and friends of Natanie, marched with us to Quebec. In the attack of that blace. on the morning of the first of January fellowing. Natania received a musquet ball through his wrist. Hie adopted a shirurgery, which seemed extraordinary, at the time, and quite new, but which now seems to me, to be that of nature itself. He drew a pledget of linnen quite through the wounds the ends of which, hung down on each side of the arm. He was taken prisoner. but general Carleton discharged him immediatly with strong tokens of commiseration. This is the first instance in the course of our revolutionary war, of the employment of Indians in actual warfare against our chemics. To be sure it was the act of a junior commander, anwarranted, so far as has come to my knowledge. by the orders of his superiors; yet it seemed to authorize, in a small degree, upon the part of our opponents, that horrible system of aggression, which in a short time ensued, and astonished and disgusted the civilized world.

۸,

Sa

78

sh

-

14

10

11-

d.

d.

DY

W÷

ed

da

W

Nov. 5th. Hunger, which neither knows governance or restraint, being now gratified, we turned our attention towards our friends, who were still in the wilderness. Smith and Simples.

the

My,

stat inst

whi

in t

dee

opp

ness

nex

a st

ing

and

thir

Nov

sine

the.

guic

of a

fice

DE D

bein

corn

and

fice

squa

qua

send

the

Thi

WO

dea

othe

(for recollection does not serve to say how my Priends Tendricks and Nichols were employed. but it was certainly in doing good,) always active, procured two young Indians, nephews of Natanis, "Sweet fellows," (as Simpson eafled them,) to proceed on the following morning to the great fall, for the person of the invaluable McCleland. Before we started, it gave me pleasure to see these youths, excited by the reward obtainod, pushing their birch-bark canon against the strict current of the river. It seemed like an egg-shell to bound over the surface of the waves of every opposing ripple. To end at once this dolorous part of our story; the young men, in despite of every impediment from the waters. and the solicitations of the starved wanderers in the rear, for food, hurried on to the fall, and on the evening of the third day, brought our flying friend to the "first house." The following day he died, and his corpse received a due respect from the inhabitants of the vicinage. We were informed of this a month after. This real catholicism towards the remains of one leved, made a deep and wide breach upon my early projudices, which since that period has caused no regret; but has induced a more extended and paternal view of mankind, unbounded by acot or opinion.

The morning of the 6th Nov. we marched in straggling parties, through a flat and rich country, sprinkled, it might be said, decorated, by many low houses, all white washed, which appeared to be the warm abodes of a contented people. Every now and then, a chapel came in sight; but more frequently the rude, but pious imitations of the sufferings of our Saviour, and the image of the virgin. These things created

surprise, at least, in my mind, for where I thought there could be little other than barbarity, we found civilized men, in a comfortable state, enjoying all the benefits arising from the institution of givil society. The river, along which the read ran, in this days march, became in the most part our guide. It now flowed in a deep and almost sightless current; where my opportunities gave me a view. Our abstemious. ness was still adhered to. About meon of the next day, we arrived at the quarters of Arnold, a station he had taken for the purpose of halting and embodying the whole of our emaciated and straggling troops. We were now perhaps thirty miles from point Levi; which is on the St. Lawrence, and nearly opposite to Quebec. Now our mess had "friends at court." Arnold. since we left the # twolve-mile-carrying place." the last time, had, deservedly, taken Steele and guide, into his mess; and he had become a kind of nid-de-camp he was, to say no more, a con-Adential man. John M. Paylor, keen and beld as an Irish groy-bound, was of our company being a ready penman and excellent accountant: He was at once exalted, by the shrewd and discorning eye of Arnold, to the offices of purveyer and commissary. We had no distinctions of office, searcely any of rank, in those days. Our squad, in consequence, came boldly up to headquarters, though we came not now into their presence. Steele, who was in waiting, pointed to the slaughter-house, a hundred yards distant. Thither we went, determined to indulge. Here we found our friend Taylor, worried almost to death, in dealing out, the sustenance of life to others. Without hyperbole or circumboution, he gave us a many pounds of beef-stukes as we

is

n

6,

ed:

12

1

16

e.

is

M.

ÀS.

X-

d-

in

n-

edi

in

18

G 2

doll

me

upt

wit

of ?

29.5

bro

wit

Wat

Ber

for

ate

ed ·

of

ly

Pos

bli

the

Inr

801

ma

my

peo

for

to

tak

shows to carry. Proceeding to the next house, a mile below, some one of the party became sock. Good bread and potutoes, with the secompanyment of beef stake, produced a savory meal. Believing myself out of danger from any extraordinary indulgence of appoints; the due quantity was exceeded, and yet, believe me, it was not more than an anchorite might religiously take. We soon became sensible of this act of imprudence. The march of the after moon was a dull and heavy one. A fever attacked me. I became, according to my feelings, the most miserable of human belogs. Determined not to lag behind, my eyes, at times, could scarcely discern the way, nor my legs do their office. We did not march far this afternoon. In this high latitude, a winter's day is very short and fleeting. The evening brought me no comfort, though we slept warmly in a farm house. The special appropriate a supplied to the brath & district

November 7th.—The army new fernied into more regular and compact order, in the morning pretty early, we proceeded. About noon my disorder had increased so intolerably, that I sculd not put a feet forward. Seating myself. upon a log at the way side, the troops passed on. In the rear came Arnold on horseback. He knew my name and character, and, good naturedly, inquired after my health. Being informed. he dismounted, ran down to the river side. and haifed the owner of the house, which stood opposite across the water. The good Canadian, in his cance, quickly arrived. Depositing my gun and accourrements in the hands of one of our men, who attended upon me, and had been disarmed by losing his rifle in some one of the wreakings above, and Arnold putting two vilver dollars into my hands, the Procedure carties me to his house. Going to bed with a high fever upon me, I lay will this and the following day without tasting food. That had been the cause of the disease. He absence became the care.

10

me

ide

DIM

be

ne.

116

hite

er.

100

the

red

•ld

eir

OB.

0 54

me

rm

nto

t I

on.

He

tu-

PRI

de.

ood

gun

our

lia-

the

Ver

The morning of the third day, (10th Nov.) brought me health. The inistress of the house. who had been very attentive and kind, asked me to breakfast. This bumble, but generous meal, consisted of a bowl of milk, for the guest. with excellent bread. The fare of the family was this same bread, garlie, and salt—I had observed, that this was the usual morning's diet. for I lay in the stove-room, where the family ate and slept. This worthy family was composed of seven persons, the purents in the prime of life, and five charming ruddy children, all neatly and warmly clothed in woolen, apparently of their own manufactory. You might suppose; from the manner of their living, that there persons were poor. No such thing. They were in good ofreumstances. Their house, barn, stabling, de were warm and comfertable, and their diet such as is universal among the French pensantry of Canada. Proffering my two dollars to this honest man, he rejected them with something like disdain in his countenance; intimating to me that he had merely obeyed the dietates of religion and humanity. Tears filled my eyes when I took my leave of these amiable people. But they had not even yet done enough for me. The father insisted on attending me to the ferry some miles off, where the river takes a turn almost due north, to meet the St. Lawrence. Here my worthy host procured me a passage ecoti free, observing to me my money. might be required before the army could be

overtaken. Landing on the north bank of the river, the way could not be mistaken, the track of the army had strongly marked the route, To me it was a most gloomy and colitary march. Not's soul was to be seen in the course of ton miles. Being without arms, and in an unknown country, my inconsequence, and futileness lay heavy on my spirits. Here and there was a farm-house, but the inhabitants were either closely housed or absent from their homes. Afternoon, arriving at the guarters of our company, my gun and accoutrements were reclaimed with ardour, and a solemn resolution never to part with them again, unless it happened by the compulsion of the foe. The house, which the company possessed, lay some hundreds of paces from head-quarters, but within views Morgan's quarters were nearer. Where Hendricks made his lodgment is not now recollected, but it was at no great distance.

On the following day, (Nov. 11th,) our guns in order, a scene opened, which then and now seems to me to have exhibited us in a disreputable point of view: it evinced, at least, the necessity of a staid and sober conduct of the offor, as well as a strict subordination and obedience of the private. A hurried and boisterous report, same from head-quarters, that the British were landing to our left at a mill, about a mile off. Each one grasped his arms. Morgan and the Indians, who lay nearest to the commander's quarters, were foremost. The running was severe. The lagging Indians, and a variety of the three companies were intermingled. Coming to the brow of the precipice, but still unseen, we perceived a boat landing, which came from a frigate laying in the stream.

spru thou place appr Ared out 1 betw yond ship found the r flyin not r one " head and. Hum withi lapse lect. howe in th the:

ing the shore disgular evide dian, scalp and bent

ek.

te

ike

on

Wn

DI

A B

OF

LI-

m-

er

by

ch

of

W

an-

ed,

me

DW:

111

he

of-

18-

er-

he

out

OF-

he

he

nd

BIR

605

ng.

ma

a mile below. The best came ashere. A youth sprung from its The tide obbing, the beatswain thought it better to obtain a deeper landing place, nearer the mill, and drew off. Morgan, apprehensive of a discovery of our presence, fired at the boat's crew. A volley ensued without harm, probably because of the great space between us. They pulled off shore, until beyond the range of our guns, leaving the midshipman to our mercy. The hapless youth, sonfounded, unknowing what to do, plunged into the river, hoping to regain his boat. . His friends flying from him, he waded, he swam, yet could not reach the boat. At the distance, perhaps, of one hundred and fifty yards, nothing but his head above water, a shooting-match took place, and believe me, the balls of Morgan, Simpson, Humphreys, and others, played around, and within a few inches of his head. Even after a lapse of thirty years, it gives me pain to recellect, that my gun was discharged at him. Such. however, was the savage ferocity engendered, in those ungracious times, by a devolution of the ministry of the mother-country, from the true line of conduct towards her colonies.

M'Kensie, (the name of the young man,) seeing that his boat's crew had deserted him, showed a desire to surrender, by approaching the shore. The firing ceased. But a still more disgusting occurrence than the preceding, followed. The lad, coming towards the shore, evidently intending to submit, Sabatis, the Indian, the brother of Natanis, sprung forward, scalping knife in hand, seemingly intending to end the strife at a single blow. The humanity of Morgan and Humphreys, towards a succumbent foe, was excited. One or the other of

them, it is not now recollected which, in particulan by his agility and amazing powers of body. was enabled to precede the Indian by several yards. This contest of athleticism was observed from the shore, where we were, with great interest. Morgan brought the boy (for he was really euch.) to land, and afterwards estoemed him. for he merited the good will of a here : Wet and hungry, we returned to quarters: Running along the shore with our prey, the Hunter sloop of war, having warped up for the purpose, pelted us all the way with ball and grape shot. It was no easy matter to ascend the bank, which was steep and craggy. Our prisoner was prudently loquacious, and very genteel. He had left the sloop, of which he was a midshipman, upon command, to procure spars and oars, which lay in the mill. He had ordered off the boat to prooure a better landing, when our imprudent fire drove his people from him. He was the brother of captain McKensie of the Pearl frigate. In 1777, the young M.Konsis was again taken. I naw him at Lancaster, (Pennsylvania,) active, lively, and facetious as ever. During our stay at point Levi, Colonel Arnold was busily engaged. Being now discovered, it became us to pass the St. Lawrence as soon as possible. The main difficulty consisted in the procurement of boats of canoes. These kinds of craft on this part of the river, had previously to our arrival, been secured by the vigilance of government, which it is likely had some intimation of an inroad in the direction we came. Twenty-five canoes, chiefly of birch bark, were with difficulty procured. The command of these was conferred upon lieutenant Steele, who selected the steeremen of whom it name to me to be

one.

Re the ... Barad minti Whood thetr to ma dit. I hie or the tr my li and ye tional may the di 50 .CE ed by derwe 2 mos the m bank: awkw die o two I who v the s with ! under but it mitta Was Co over t them.

bleak

one. The passage, if practicable, must be made in the night, and that in the most silent man nor, at a time the tide perved.

eu-

rda

est.

aliv

im.

Wet

ning

loop

lted

WAS

WAS

maly

the

pon

lay

fire

ther

. In

Market 1

tive.

gag-

s to

The

at of

this

ival.

ent.

n in-

-five

diffi+

WAS

eted

o be

Between the hours of 10 and 21 o'clock on the night of the 18th of November, the troops naraded on the beach, near the mill before mentioned, without soice or bustle. One cargo was despatched then a second; upon making the traverse a third time, an agaident happened to my friend Steele, which you can scarcely eredit. Being at a considerable distance behind with his cance, I could not, at its occurring, observe the transaction, nor share in the danger, though my life would have been willingly risked for his, and yet the relation of this fact, is most unquestionably true. These frequent asseverations, may appear somewhat awkward and to blur the detail of our story; but our sufferings were so extraordinary in their kinds, and so aggravated by the nature of the severe services we underwent, that now-a-days it will require a faith almost approaching to oredulity, to convince the mind of their truth. Steele steered a birch bank canoe, the weight, and it is likely the awkwardness of the men, when about the middle of the river, (which at this place is fully two miles wide,) burst the cance. The men who were in it, swam to, or were taken up, by the canoes nearest to them. It was otherwise with Steele. He was the last to get to a canon under the management of the worthy Wheelers but it was full of men. There could be no ad-The atcorsman advised, and Stoole was compelled from necessity, to throw his arms over the stern-Wheeler, seating himself upon them, so as to held him securely, for it was a bleak and numbing night. Thus, in this manner was this worthy and adventurous officer. floated to the shore at Wolf's cove. Here there was an uninhabited house. A fire had been lighted in it, by some of our people, who first landed. It became a pole-star to us in the rear, we steered for it. Landing about half an hour after Steele. we found him at the fire, scemingly chilled to the heart; but he was a man not to be disspirited by slight matters. Friction soon restored him to his usual animation. The moon. now about three o'clock, shone brightly, and the tide run out rapidly, so that the passing of the rest of the troops, about one hundred and fifty in number, this night, was given up. This circurestance, of the absence of so large a part of our force, was known but to few. They joined us on the following night. It had been the intention of our chief, to storm the town this night: but the deficiency of our scaling ladders. many of which were left beyond the river, now repressed that design.

re

WA

bet

We

us.

Wa

dis

WN

mo

toe

If i

evi

oity

ed.

Alba

tion

Was

.

and

res

whi

me

of .

us.

har

res

to

We

ing

November 14th. The troops easily ascended the hill, by a good road out in it slantingly. This was not the case in 1759, when the immertal Wolf mounted here, it was then a steep declivity, enfiladed by a host of savages, but was surmounted by the eager and gallant spirit of

November 15th. Arriving on the brow of the precipice, we found ourselves on the plains of Abraham, so deservedly famous in story. The morning was cold, and we were thinly elad. While an adventurous party despatched by Arnold, under the command of one of Morgan's lieutenants, were examining the walls of the city, we were pacing the Plains to and fro, in silence, to keep ourselves warm. The winter

er.

ere

ht-

nd-

We

afgly

t to

oon

on.

the

the

cir-

t of

ned

in-

this

ers

BOW.

ded

wly.

teep

WRS'

t of

the

n of The

slad.

Ar-

an's

the

, in

inter

had set in a cold northwester blow, with uncommon becauses. By the time the reconsitring party returned, daylight was not very distant. The party found every thing towards the city, in a state of perfect quietness. This report was delivered, in my presence, to Morgan. however, the country may have been represent od since. Not even the cry of MAll'a well," was attered, was a part of their report, yet we heard that cry from the walls, even where we were: but this in a direct line, was morrer to us than the veices opposite to the party. This was the happy mement, but with our small and disjointed force, what could be done? There was searcely more than three hundred and fifty men, willing and determined to be sure, but too few to assail a fortress such as Quebec is If that had been known this night, which was evidenced in a few days by the fugitives from the city, Arnold would most assuredly have hazarded an attack. St. John's gate, which opens ca Abraham's plains, and is a most important station, was unbarred, nay, unclosed: nothing but a single cannon under the care of a drower watch, was there as a defence; we were not a mile distant, and might have entered unknown. and even unseen. These are uncertain opinions. resting on the vague reports of the moment, which might have been true, or untrue. Mr memory is, however, fresh in the recollection of the heart-burnings this failure caused among us. Providence, for wise purposes, would hove it otherwise. Near daylight, requiring rest and refreshment, the troops moved a mile. to a farm-house of Lieutenant Governor Caldwell's. This was a great pile of wooden buildings, with numerous outhouses, which tostified

H

the agricultural apirit and taste of the owner. He, good soul, was then snug in Quebec. Those who came first, fared well, and as luck would have it, we were of the number: all within and without the house, became a prev. Adversity had destroyed in our minds, every decorous or delicate sensation. Guards were stationed next the city. Wrapped in my blanket, fearless of events, casting my person on the floor of an elegant paylour. I slept sweetly and soundly, till two in the afternoon, and then was roused solely by a cry, that the enemy was advancing. We flew to arms, and rather in a hurried manner, run towards the city, which was nearly two miles from us. We saw no enemy. It turned out that a Mr. Ogden, a cadet from Jersey, a large and handsome young man, in favor with Arnold, had been authorized to place the sentinels that day. He did place them, most stupidly. George Merchant, of Morgan's, a man who would at any time, give him fairplay, have sold his life dearly, he stationed in a thicket, within view of the enemy; at the time of placing him. when at his post, he was out of sight of the garrison; but the mischief was, (though he could not be seen.) he could see no one approach; he was taken absolutely unaware of danger. sergeant of the "seventh," who, from the manner of the thing, must have been clever, accomnamed by a few privates, slily creeping through the streets of the suburbs of St. John, and then under the cover of the bushes, sprung upon the devoted Merchant, even before he had time to cock his rifle. Merchant was a tall and handsome Virginian. In a few days, he, huntingshirt and all, were sent to England, probably as a finished specimen of the riflemen of the co-

d

louies. The government there very liberally,

sent him home in the following year.

11

.

h

-

d

in

Ď,

d

10

D-

h

A

IB.

d.

The capture of Merchant grieved us. and brought us within a few hundred yards of the citv. Arnold had the boldness, you might say the audacity, or still more correctly, the folly, to draw us up in a line, in front and opposite to the wall of the city. The parapet was lined by handreds of gaping citizens and soldiers, whom our guns could not harm, because of the distance. They gave us a huzza! We returned it. and remained a considerable time huzzaing, and spending our powder ugainst the walls, for we harmed no one. Some of our men to the right. under the cover of something like ancient ditches and hillocks, crept forward within two hundred vards of the works. but their firing was disregarded by the enemy as farcical. Febiger. who was a real and well instructed soldier, and engineer, did advance singly within a hundred paces; and pored with the eve of an adept. Dur ing all this, as my station in the line happened to be on a mound, a few feet higher than the common level of the plain, it was perceptible through the embrasures that there was a vast bustle within. In some minutes a thirty-six nounder was let loose upon us; but so ill was the gun pointed, that the ball fell short, or passed high over our heads. Another, and another succocded to these salutes, we gave them all we could, another and another huzza. It must be confessed, that this ridiculous affair, gave me a contemptible opinion of Arnold. This notion was by no means singular. Morgan, Febiger and other officers, who had seen service, did not heritate to speak of it in that point of view. However, Arnold had a vain desire to gratify,

of which we were then ignorant. He was well known at Quebec. Formerly, he had traded from this port to the West Indies, most particularly in the article of horses. Hence, he was despised by the principal people. The enithet "Horsejockey," was freely and univers-Ally bestowed upon him, by the British. Having now obtained power, he became apxious to display it in the faces of these, who had formerly despited and contemped him. The venerable Carleton, an Irishman of a most amiable and mild character, colonel Maclean, a Scotchman, old in warfare, would not, in any shape, communicate with him. If Montgomery had originally been our commander, matters might have been more civilly conducted. This particularity in relating a most trivial and disgusting occurrence, arises from a desire, to set befere you, a contionary rule, which it will be prudent for you to observe in your historical reading. ... Do not believe an author, unless " the story he relates be probable, accompanied " by such sirgumstances as might reasonably " attend the transaction, unless he is correbo-" rated by others, who speak on that subject." Many of our wisest men, within the colonies. wrote and spoke of this bravading, as a matter of moment, and with much applause. Even some of our historians, (Gordon) have given it celebrity. But a more ailly and boastful British historian, (Amwell) says there was a dreadful cannounde, by which many of the rebels were destroyed. The truth is, that this day not a drop of blood was shed, but that of Governor Caldwell's horned cattle, hogs and poultry, which run plentifully. After thin view tory in huzzaine, which was boys' play, and

COL

24

the

She

Mis

éd.

tiol

. : 1

con

Ab

COR

hou

Wes

the

eres

Her

fine

for

Prov

deet

ie a

the

decu

Hery

Luci

iet v

of se

partake of the good things of this world.

The next day, (Nov. 15th,) a scene of a different kind opened, which let as into the true character of Arnold. In the wilderness, the men had been stinted to a plot of flour by the day. This scantly allowance of flour had been continued since we had come into this plentiful tountry. Morgan, Hendricks and Smith, waited upon the commander in chief, to represent the grievance and obtain redress. Alternation and warm language took place. Smith, with his usual legislety, told us, that Morgan seemed, at one time, upon the point of striking Arabold. We fured the better for this interview.

nt

Ė.

6-

be

ly

0-

22

25

11-

en

en

st-

124

he

of

On the Millowing day, (Nov. 16th.) the rifle companies removed further from the city. About half a mile from Caldwell's house, out company obtained excellent quarters, in the house of a French gentleman, who seemed wealthy. He was pleasing in his manners, but the rudeness our ungovernable men exhibited. created in him on apparent disgust towards ut. Here we remained near a week. During that time, we had constant and severe duty to perform. There was a large building on the low grounds, near the river St. Charles, which was occupied by a most respectable society of ludies no a numbery. In the front of this house, at the distance of fifty yards, there was a spacious log building, which seemed to be a school house. secupied by the priesthood attendant on the nunstery. This house we took possession of, as & guard-house, ander an idea, as it stood directly between the town and the nunnery, which containof some precious deposits, that they had not had

time to remove, that the enemy would not fire in this direction. The conjecture was just.

Nov. 16th.-In the afternoon a distressing occurrence took place here, notwithstanding our visipity to this holy place. Towards the evening the guard was relieved. Lieut. Simpson commanded it. This guard was composed of two-and-twenty fine fellows, of our company. When the relief-guard came, a Frenchman, of a most villainous appearance, both as to person and visage, came to our lieutenant, with a written order from collonel Arnold, commanding him to accompany the bearer, who would be our guide acress the river St. Charles, to obtain some cattle feeding beyond it, on the account of government. The order, in the first instance. because of its preposterousness, was doubted, but, upon a little reflection, obeyed. Knowing the danger, our worthy lieutenant also knew, the best and only means of executing the enterrize. The call " come on lads," was uttered. Ve ran with speed from the guard-house some undreds of yards, over the plain to the mouth of the St. Charles, where the fury is. Near the ferry there was a large wind mill, and near it stood a small house resembling a Cooper's shop. Two carts of a large size, were passing the ferry heavily laden with the houshold-stuff. and women and children of the townsmen flying from the suburbs of St. Roque, contiguous to palace-gate, to avoid the terrible and fatal effects of war. The carts were already in a large seow, or flat-bottomed boat, and the ferrymon, seeing us coming, were tugging hard at the ferry-rope, to get off the boat, which was aground, before we should arrive. It was no small mutter, in exertion, to outdo people of our agility.

TO

10-

MP

of

son.

rit-

ing

be

ain

t of

100.

ted.

ing

ew.

ter-

red.

ome

outh

near

sing

stuff.

ying

arge mon.

fer-

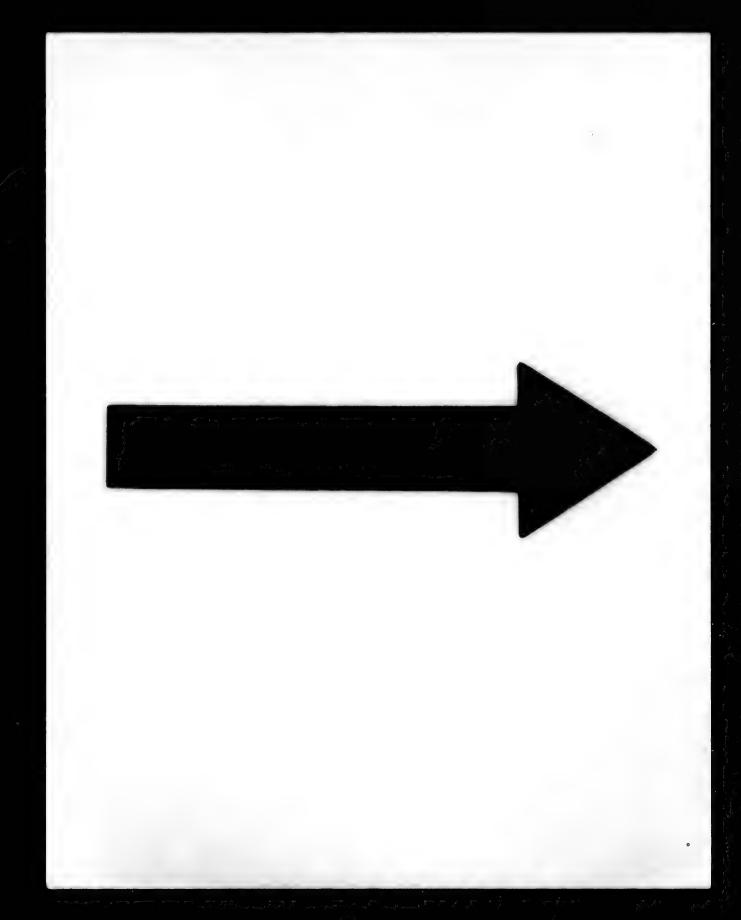
mod.

mat-

ility.

Simpson, with his usual good humour, urged the race, from a hope that the garrison would not fire upon us, when in the boat with their flying townsmen. The weight of our bodies and arms put the boat aground in good curnest. Simpson veciforously arging the men to free the boat, directing them to place their guns in my arms, standing on the bow. He ordered me to watch the flushes of the cannon of the city near palace gate. Jumping into the water middeep, all but sergeant Dixon and myself, they were pushing, pulling, and with handspikes attempting to foat the scow. One of the carts stood between Dixon and myself-he was tugging at the ferry rope. Presently " a shot," was called, it went wide of the boat, its mark. The exertions of the party were redoubled. Keeping an eye upon the town, the sup about setting, in a clear sky, the view was beautiful indeed. but somewhat terrific. Battlements like these had been unknown to me. Our boat lay like a rock in the water, and was a target at point blank shot, about three-fourths of a mile from palace gate, which issues into St. Rogne. I would have adored all the saints in the Kalendar, if honor and their worships would have permitted the transportation of my person a few perches from the spot where it then stood, by the austere command of duty. It was plainly observable that many persons were ongaged in preparing the guns for another dis-

This was a ridiculous practice, universally adopted in the camp near Boston, and was now pursued at this place. It is merely designative of the raw soldier. Such indications of fear should now-a-days be severely reprimanded.



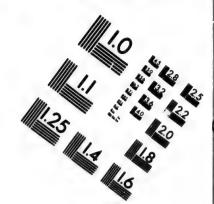
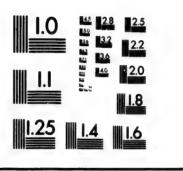


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)

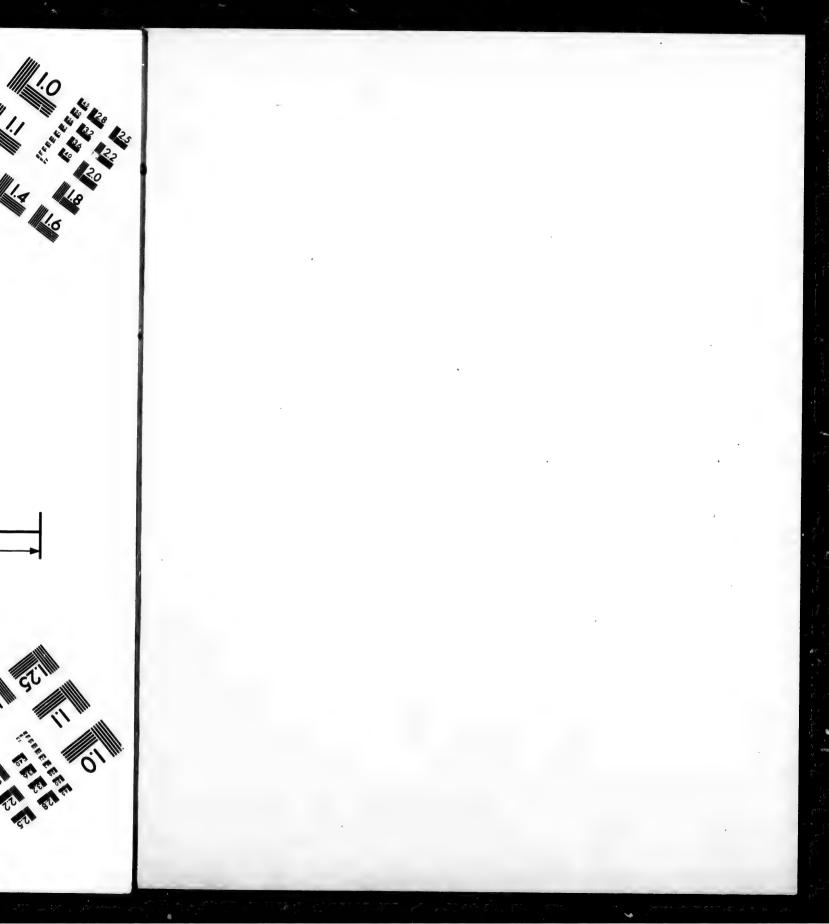




Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



charge. Our brave mon were striffier every nerve to obtain vacous. "" A shot?" was all that could be said when a thirty-six pound ball. touching the lower edge of the nob of the care wheel, descending a little, took the leg of my natriotic friend below the kneer and earried away the bones of that part entirely. "Oh! Simpson," he eried, "I win gone," Simpson, whose heart was tender and kind, leaped into the bout : calling to the men, the person of Dixon was borne to the windmill. Now a rear of triumph was heard from the city, accompanied by some tolerably well directed shots. The unfortunate was borne at a slow and solemn pace. to the guard-house, the enemy, every new and then, sending us his majesty's compliments, in the shape of a 22 or 36 pound ball. When the procession came into a line with the town, the guard-house and numery, the firing ceased. At the time we were most busily engaged with Dixon at the windmill, the vile Frenchman mehast and horror stricken, fled from us to the city. If his desertion had been noticed in time. his fate had been scaled, but the rascal was unobserved till he had ren several handred vards stong the beach of the bay of St. Charles. He turned out to be a spy, purposely sent by govcomment to decoy and entrap us, and he succeeded but too ensily with the vigilant Arnold Dixon was now carried on a litter to the house of an English gentleman, about a mile off. An amputation took place a tetanus followed. which, about 9 o'clock of the ensuing day, end ed in the dissolution of this henorable citizen and soldier. There are many reasons for detailing this affair so minutely to you. Among these are, to impress upon your minds an like

of th meal parti your is ch enter Befo were The glan rever body ernn polit our . the c taxat hand WAS. right riotis bover one Was ! she p said Ut

this is by eving he proportion for the filay is Lancoultu

taint; In fa of the manners and spirit of those times; our means and rude methods of warfare: but more particularly for the purpose of introducing to your observation an anecdote of Dixon, which is characteristic of the ideas and feelings then entertained by the generality of his countrymen. Before we left our native homes, ten had, as it were, become an abomination even to the ladies. The taxation of it by the parliament of England, with design to draw from us a trifling revenue, was made the pretence with the great body of the people, for our opposition to government. The true ground, however, with the politically wise, was, that that law annihilated our rights as Englishmen. It is an axiom of the common law of our glorious ancestors, that taxation and representation must go hand in hand. This rule was now violated. Hence it was, that no one male or female, knowing their rights, if possessed of the least spark of patriotism, would deign to taste of that delightful boyerage. The lady of the house, though not one who approved of our principles of action, was very attentive to our wounded companion : she presented him a bowl of tea; "No madam." said he, "it is the ruin of my country."

Uttering this noble sentiment, (Nov. 17th,) this invaluable citizen died, sincerely lumented by every one who had the opportunity of knowing his virtues. Dixon was a gentleman of good property and education, though no more than the first sergeant of our company. His estate lay in W. Hanover township, in the county of Lancaster, (now in Dauphin.) He was an agriculturalist, which, in the vagueness and uncertainty of our language, is called "a farmer." In fact he was a freeholder, the possessor of an

excellent tract of land, accompanied by all those agreeables which render the cultivator of the earth, in Pennsylvania, the most independent, and, with prudent economy, the most happy of human beings. The following morning, Simpson was the first to give me an account of Dixon's death, which affected us much, his corpse received the usual military honors. Duty compelled my absence elsewhere. The blood of Dixon was the first oblation made upon the altar of Liberty at Quebec, and Merchant was the first prisoner. The latter was a brave and determined soldier, fitted for subordinate station; the former was intuitively a captain. The city and vicinity occupied the attention of the com-

mander nearly a week. Nov. 18th. Not being fully in the secret, it does not become me to recount the causes of our retreat: to Point Aux Tremble. We did however make this retrograde movement, rather in a slovenly style, accompanied, probably, by the maledictions of the clergy and nobility, but attended by the regrets of a host of well-wishers among the peasantry. Point Aux Tremble is at the distance of twenty, or more, miles from Quebec. The route thither, though in a severe winter, was interesting. The woods were leafless, except as to those trees of the fir-kind; but numerous neat and handsomely situated farm-houses, and many beautiful landscapes were presented, and enlivened our march along this majestic stream. At Detroit, which is supposed to be little short of nine hundred miles from Quebec:-even there, it is no contemptible river, but here the immense volume of its waters, strikes the mind of the stranger with astonishment and rapture. Our Susquehanna,

pea wit a di SOOT cont Tha fron ture kind the : upon gard asgo miss the: with Aux appea a spa Rom a per vency came preju lage some. ed as and c Provi which lent i dome

we no

the fa

air co

whi

all

of

ent.

of

mp-

on's

re-

om-

of

ltar

the

de-

on:

city

om-

OUT

We-

in s

the

t at-

hers

e is

rom

VOPO

caf-

ind:

ated

apes

long

1 15

ailes

pti.

i ito

which, from its grandeur, attracts the European eye, stands in a low grade when compared with the St. Lawrence. Ascending the river at a distance of ten or fifteen miles, we observed the rapid passage, down stream; of a boat, and soon afterwards of a ship, one or other of which contained the person of Sir Guy Carleton, That it was the governor of the province, flying from Montgomery, who had by this time captured Montreal, we were informed by a special kind of messenger, which was no other than the report of the cannon, by way of feu-de-joye, upon his arrival at the capital. Water, in regard to the communication of sound, is nearly as good a conductor as metals are, for the trant mission of the electric fluid. Though near to the place of our destination, we could mark with precision the report of every gun. Point Aux Tremble, at this time, had assumed the appearance of a straggling village. There was a spacious chapel. where the ceremonies of the Roman-Catholic religion were performed, with a pemp not seen in our churches, but by a fervency and zeal apparently very pious, which became a severe and additional stroke at early prejudices. Quarters were obtained in the village and farm houses, dispersed over a space of some miles, up and down the river. We enjoyed as much comfort as tight houses, warm fires, and our scantiness of clothing would admit. Provisions were in plenty, and particularly beef, which, though small in bulk, was of an excellent flavour. Being in a few days, as it were, domesticated in a respectable farmer's house, we now had leisure to observe the economy of the family. Every crevice through which cold air could penetrate, was carefully pasted with

TH

- un

it i

me

of

- bul

din

our

As

me

per

rati

hou

the

mac

not

len

Slei

The

full

fow

kep

a ele

barr

mar

earl

were

The

mar

taint

of e

terw

row.

in e

Fran

effec

strips of paper of every colour. To permit the cold air to intrude is not the only evil which results; but the smallest interstice with the air, also admits an almost impalpable snow, which is very inconvenient, particularly at night, when the winds blow most sharply. A stove of iron stood a small space from the wall of the kitchen chimney, but in such a way that it might be encompassed by the family or the guests. This stove was kept continually hot, both by day and by night. Over the stove their is a rack so constructed as to serve for the drying of wet clothes, mackasing, &c. &c. When these neonle slaughter their beasts for winter use, they cut up the meat into small pieces, such as a half pound, two paunds &c. according to the number of the family. In the evening before bedtime, the females of the house, prepare the dinner of the following day. It may be particularly described, as it was done in our view for a number of days tagether, and during the time was never yaried. This was the manner: A piece of pork or heef, or a portion of each kind, together with a sufficiency of cabbage, potatoes and turning, seasoned with salt, and an adequate quantity of water, were put into a neat tin kettle with a close lide The kettle, thus replenished, was placed on the stove in the room where we all slept, and there it simmered till the time of rising, when it was taken to a small five in the kitchen, where a stewing continued till pear noon, when they dined. The contents were teemed into a large bason. Each person had a plate—no knife was used, except one to cut the bread, but a five er six pronged fork answered the purposes of a spoon. The meat required no cutting, as it was reduced to a musilage, or at least to shreds.

the

TO-

air.

nhen

iron

ehen

9 CD-

This

baa y

con-

thes.

augh-

p the

ound.

of the

he fe-

of the

ribed.

f days

raried.

r heef, a suffi-

cason.

water,

se lide

on the

it was

here a ley di-

large

fe was

five or

it was

shreds

This, you may say, is trifling information, and unworthy of your notice; according to my mind, it is important to all of us. to know the habits. manners, and means of existence of that class of society, which, in all nations, composes the bulk and strength of the body politic. Our dinner followed in a few hours. The manner of our cookery excited astonishment in our hosts. As much beef was consumed at a single meal, as would have served this family for a week. Remember. however, that the mess consisted of persons who were entitled to double and treble rations. Two rosy-checked daughters of the house, soon contrived the means and obtained the surplus. This circumstance, most probably, made us agreeable to the family, for we had nothing else to bestow. The snow had now fallen in abundance, and enlivened the country. Sleighs and sleds were passing in every direction. The farmers began to supply themselves with a full stock of winter's fuel from the forest. No fowls were visible about the house—a few were kept alive for breeding in the ensuing summer, in a close and warm coop in the upper-story of the barn. The rest of the fowls, intended for the market or winter's use, had been slaughtered, early in autumn, at setting in of the frost, and were hung up in the feathers in the garret. Thence they were taken as wanted. Towards march they become unsavoury, but in no way tainted. We became acquainted with this kind of economy, but upon a much larger scale afterwards, when in a state of affliction and sorrow. The roads in this part of Capada are kept in excellent order. The corvee of European France is maintained by the government in full effect, as to its principles, but far less rigid in

I

its practice. The roads in low grounds, were ditched on the sides and curved towards the centre. Every forty or fifty yards on each side of the road, throughout the extent of it, young pines were stuck in the ground, to mark the central and safest passage. It is a law, that the landholder, whenever a snow falls, whether by day or hight, when it ceases, shall with his horses and cariole, retrace the read, formed on the preceding snow, throughout the extent of his grounds. This is a laborious duty, but it was discernible. that it was performed with punctuality, if not pleasure. In December, January, and February, when the snow lays from three to five feet deep over the surface, there is no travelling in this country, but by ways thus formed, or upon snow shoes.

On the first of December, general Montgomery, who was anxiously expected, arrived. Arnold's corps, was paraded in the front of the chapel. It was lowring and cold, but the appearance of the general here, gave us warmth and animation. He was well limbed, tall and handsome, though his face was much pock-marked. His air and manner, designated the real coldier. He made us a short, but energetic and elegant speech, the burthen of which, was an applause of our spirit in passing the wilderness; a hope. bur perseverance in that spirit would continue: and a promise of warm clothing; the latter was a most comfortable assurance. A few huzans from our freezing bodies, were returned to this address of the gallant bero. Now new life was infused into the whole of the corps.

The next day (December 2d;) we retraced the route from Quebec. A snow had fallen during the night, and continued falling. To march on this snow, was a most fatiguing business. By

this. with 2000 with Ware mock posit prod use . were phon in th from took Mory apar of th

> findia near try h moda in th in g nians qaste restr Dress of pi the e to ou n dre thinl had f

ly, o

ouffer

a des

TI

vere

cen-

the

ines

fral

old-

y or

and

ced-

inds.

ible.

f not

ary.

deen

this

mow

tgo-

Ar-

cha-

Bar-

and

and-

ked.

lier.

rant

ause

one.

nue;

atter

huz-

rned

new

AT BY TO

the

ring

h.on

By

this time, we had generally furnished ourselves: with seal-skip mockasins, which are large, and according to the usage of the country, stuffed with hay or leaves, to keep the feet dry and warm. Every step taken in the dry snow, the mockasin having no raised heel to support the position of the foot, it slipped back, and thus produced great weariness. On this march the use of the snow-shoe was very obvious, but we were destitute of that article. The evening brought up the riflemen at an extensive house. in the parish of St. Foix, about three miles, from Quebec. It was inhabited by tenants. We took possession of a front parlour on the left, Morgan, one upon the right. Hendricks, a back apartment; and the soldiery in the upper parts of the house, and some warm out-buildings.

The next day (December 8d.) Morgan not finding himself comfortable, moved a short space nearer to the city. Here, in low and pretty country houses, he and his men, were neatly accommodated. It seemed to me, that the Canadians. in the vicinage of Quebee, lived as comfortably, in general, as the generality of the Pennsylvanians did at that time, in the county of Laneaster. It may readily occur to you, that some restriction ought to cramp this latitude of expression; take it, however, as a description of our sensations, entertained in our minds by the conveniences we now enjoyed, in opposition to our late privations. We had just arrived from n dreary and inhospitable wild, half-starved and thinly clothed, in a land of plenty, where we had full rations and warm quarters, consequently, our present feelings contrasted with former aufferings, might have appreciated in too high a degree, the happiness of the Canadian What

is now said, ought not to be taken in anywise, as an allusion to the political rights, but be confined solely to the apparent prosperity and eco-

nomy of families.

December 12th. We remained about ten days at these quarters. The tours of duty, to Arnold's party, were peculiarly severe. The officers and men, still wore nothing else, than the remains of the summer clothing, which being on their back, had escaped destruction in the disasters of the wilderness. The snow lay three feet deep over the face of the whole country, and there was an addition to it almost daily. Many impediments occurred, to delay the transportation of the clothing, which general Montgomery had procured for us at Montreal. Our miserable state, contrary to our principles, excited an illicit desire, to be apparrelled more comfortably. This desire would probably have lain dormant, but for a scoundrel Canadian, who in all likelihood, was an enemy of Lieutenant Governor Cromie's. One morning having returned from a cold night's duty, near palacegate, the fellow addressed Simpson, who was the only officer in quarters, and communicated the information: "That about two miles up " the St. Lawrence, lay a country seat of Governor Cromic's, stocked with many things we wanted, and he would be our guide." Car riole's were immediately procured. The house, a neat box, was romantically situated on the steep bank of the river, not very distant from a chapel. Though in the midst of winter, the spot displayed the elegant taste and abundant wealth of the owner. It must be a most delight ful summer residence, in the months of July and August, when the heat of this northern eli-

mat our MAL to u Was cam of t with intro men liver of h Servi trem disco In t the f ally inter The grea not : beef. Whi lieut My: door ed a vants oned 118 2 hend

ly g

the

Here

mate, seems greater to sensation, than that of our country, in the same season. The house was closed; knocking, the hall-door was opened to us by an Irishwoman, who, of the fair sexwas the largest and most brawny, that ever came under my notice. She was the stewardess of the house. Our questions were answered with an apparent affability and frankness. She introduced us into the kitchen, a large apartment, well filled with those articles, which goodlivers think necessary, to the happy enjoyment of life. Here we observed, five or six Canadian servants. huddled into a corner of the kitchen, trembling with fear. Our prying eyes, soon discovered a trap-door leading into the cellar, In the country houses of Canada, because of the frigidity of the climate, the cellars are usually under a warm room, and are principally intended, for the preservation of vegetables. The eavity in this instance, abounded with a great variety of catables, of which, we were not in the immediate want. The men entered it—Firkin, after firkin of butter; lard, tallow, beef, pork, fresh and salt—all became a prey. While the men were rummaging below, the lieutenant descended to cause more despatch. My duty was to remain at the end of the trap. door, with my back to the wall, and rifle cock. ed as a sentry, keeping a strict eye on the servants. My good Irishwoman frequently beckoned to me to descend: her drift was to catch us all in the trap. Luckily she was comprehended. The cellar and kitchen being thoroughly gutted, and the spoil borne to the carriages. the party dispersed into the other apartments. Here was elegancy. The walls and partitions, were beautifully papered and decorated, with

the ant

se,

on-

CO-

d's

ers.

re-

on

lis-

ree

ry,

ily.

ns-

nt-

)ur

ex-

ore

AVC

an,

en-

ing

CG-

Vas

ted

up

30-

ngs

CHA

se,

the

à 8

uly

large engravings, maps, &c. &c. of the most celebrated artists. A noble view of the city of Philadelphia, upon a large scale, taken from the neighbourhood of Cooper's ferry, drew my attention, and raised some compunctive ideas: but war and the sciences always stand at arms length in the contests of mankind. The latter must succumb in the tumult.' Our attention was much more attracted by the costly feather beds, counterpanes, and charming rose-blankets, which the house afforded, Of these there was good store, and we left not a jot behind us. The nooks and crevices in the carioles, were filled with smaller articles; several dozons of admirably finished case-knives and forks—even a sett of desert knives obtained the notice of our capidity. Articles of lesser moment, not a thousandth part so useful, did not escape the all-grasping hands of the soldiery. In a back apartment, there stood a mahogany couch, or settee in a highly finished style. The woodwork of the gouch was raised on all sides by cushioning, and lastly, covered by a rich figured silk. This to us, was lumber, besides our earioles were full. However, we grabbed the matrass and pallets, all countly elegant as the couch: Having, as we thought, divested his Excellency of all the artieles of prime necessity, we departed, ostensibly and even audibly accompanied by the pious blessings of the stewardess for our moderation. No doubt she had her mental reservations; on such business as this, we regarded neither. Near the chapel, we met a party of Morgan's men coming to do that, which we had already done. The officer appeared chagrined when he saw the extent of our plunder. He went on, and finally ransacked the house, and yet a little more, the

sta plu Wa ma VAL 66 · O 66 g 60 44 C WA son of dec Wei res ty,

ation of the same of the same

of wa

eleu

ila

æh-

ion.

and

the

mb

ore

ter-

the

DFG.

and

hed

Ar

part

rere

Was

was

ow-

we rti-

ibly

ESS-

No

neh

the

om-

The

OX.

ally

the

stables. The joy of our men, among whom, the plunder was distributed in nearly equal portions. was extravagant. Now an operation of the human mind, which often takes place in society, and is every day discernible by persons of observation, became clearly obvious. "Let a man " once with impunity, desert the strict rule of " right, all subsequent aggression, is not only "increases in atrocity, but is done without " qualm of conscience." Though our company was composed principally of freeholders, or the sons of such. bred at home under the strictures of religion and morality, yet when the reins of decorum were loosed, and the honorable feeling weakened, it became impossible to administer restraint. The person of a tory, or his property, became fair game, and this at the denunciation of some base domestic villain.

On the morning following, (Dec. 18th,) the same audacious scoundrel again returned... By leading to the first affair, and his intercourses with the privates, he had so wormed himself into their good graces, that nothing would do but a system of marauding upon our supposed encmies, the tories. In this new expedition, which was further than the former, the officers thought it prudent to accompany the men, in truth, to keep order and repress their ardency. We are rived at a farm said to belong to Gov. Cromic or, some other inhabitant of Quebec. The farms house, though low, being but one story, was capacious, and telerably neat. The barn built of logs, with a threshing-floor in the centre, was from seventy to eighty feet in length. The tenant, his wife, and children, shuddered upon our approach. Assurances that they should be unharmed, relieved their fears The tenant

selv

kar

ber.

labo

We.

hou

plac

stro

ly r

sitio

hous

in'i

ated

er i

and

hill,

fron

whi

wou

lows

clos

but

yard

forn

we :

abov

said

war

thes

hon

and

hou

deg

of t

(wh

St.

pointed out to us the horned-cattle, pigs, and poultry of his landlord. These we shot down without mercy, or drove before us to our quarters. Thus we obtained a tolerable load for our caravan, which consisted of five or six carioles.

With this disreputable exploit, marauding ceased. A returning sense of decency and order, emanating from ourselves, produced a species of contrition. It is a solemn truth, that we plundered none, but those who were notoriously tories, and then within the walls of Quebec. The clergy, the nobles, and the peasantry, were respected and protected, especially the latter, with whom, to use a trite expression. we traternized. The minuteness of this description of occurrences, of a trivial, yet disgraceful nature, is made the more strongly to impress your minds, with the horrors attendant on civil wars. This species of war, more than any other. not only affects the great and the wealthy, but it intrudes itself into, and devastates the cottage. This the American people know, from the many melancholy scenes, which succeeded the peried spoken of.

Gracious and Almighty God! the shield and protector of the good, as well as thou art the scaurge of the base and wicked nation, avert from my country, this the most terrible of thy

modes of temporal vengeance.

December 15th. In a short time, the rifle companies moved and occupied good quarters on the low grounds, near St. Charles' river, and about two miles from Quebec. Our clothing waz still of the flimsy kind, before noted, but our hearts were light, even to merriment. Individually, frem our own fands, we supplied our

WB

P

OF

344

ng

710

ant

10+

16-

III+

lly

m,

ip-

:e-

285

vil

er,

ut

e.

8-

e-

2.1

nd .

he

rt

hy

le-

rs nd

selves with arm-gloves, and renewed our moe-This was about the middle of December. During all this time. our daily duty was laborious in various ways, and every other night. we mounted guard at St. Roque. A guardhouse, ere this had been established at this place, in a very large stone-house, which, though strong, being exposed to the enemy's fire, was soon battered about our ears, the distance scarcely more than three hundred yards. That position was changed for one more secure. house, which had been a tavern, was adopted in its stead. This house was pecularly situated. It was comparatively small with the former in its dimensions, but the walls were strong, and the cielings bomb-proof. It stood under the hill, so as to be out of the range of the shot, from the ramparts contiguous to Palace gate, which were elevated far above us. Simpson would say, Jack, let us have a shot at those fellows. Even at noon-day, we would creep along close to the houses, which ranged under the hill, but close in with it, till we came within forty yards of Palace-gate. Here was a smith-shop, formed of logs, through the crevices, of which, we would fire, at an angle of 70, at the sentries above us. Many of them were killed, and it was said, several officers. This was dishonorable war, though authorized by the practices of those times. The distance from this guardhouse to Palace-gate, may be three hundred and fifty yards. The hill, at the back of the house, seemed to make an angle of 60 or 70. degrees. This aclivity continued from the walls of the city, and around it by the Lower town, (where it is greatest,) for many miles up the St. Lawrence and St. Charles, and forms the

re

W

tio

on

sei

up

sta

WB

my

the

建

in

eve

the

of

28h

us,

Wa

000

tee

ly

be

T

hei

tho

pre

. kn

tes

of

-siti

PFO

110

hasis of Abraham's Plains. It was about that time the York artillerists, under captain Lamb, had constructed a battery on the Plains, at the distance of 600 or 700 yards from the fortress. The earth was too difficult for the intrenching tools to pierce, the only method left, was to raise a battery composed of ice and snow. The snow was made into ice by the addition of water. The work was done in the night time. Five or six nine-pounders, and a howitzer were placed in it; it was searcely completed, and our guns had opened on the city, before it was pierced through and through, by the weightier mutal of the enemy. Several lives were lost on the first and second day. Yet the experiment was persisted in, till a single ball, piercing the batter: ry, killed and wounded three persons. In the quarters last mentioned, we enjoyed some please ant days. The winter in Canada, as with us. is the season of good humour and joy.

December 18th, 19th. Upon a secession from the out-post, or other military employments, we were agreebly received in the farm houses around. Our engagements near Palace-gate, still continued to be of the arduous kind; our numbers being few, every second watch was performed by the same persons, who had made the guard the last but one. Between the guardhouse, and the extreme end of the suburbs of St. Roque, which may be half a mile from the ramparts, there was a rising ground in the main street fairly in view of the enemy, and whilst we relieved in daylight, was raked, even by grape shot. Some good men were lost here. This circumstance, changed the time of relief. to nine o'clock in the evening. The rifle-men und equal their contains distribly areas well the

nb.

the

188

ng

to

he

er.

OF

eed.

un's

eed :

ital

the

Valle:

ten:

the

23-

us,

OH

its.

ses

ite.

Dur

RRY

ide

rel

of

the

the

nd

were principally employed as guards, at this dangerous station. It is but fair and honest to relate to you, an anecdote concerning myself, which will convey to your minds, some notion of that affection, of the head or heart, which the military call a panic terror. Being one of the guard and having been relieved as a centry, about twelve or one ofclock at night, upon returning to the guard-house, in a dozing state: I cast myself on a bench, next the back wall-young, my sleeps were deep and heavy; my youth obtained this grace from Simpson, the officer who commanded; about three e'clock. I was roused by a horrible noise. The enemy. in casting their shells, usually began in the evening, and threw but a few, towards morning, they became more alert. Our station being out of sight, it was so managed, as to throw the shells on the side of the hill, directly back of us, so as they would trundle down against the wall of the guard-house. This had frequently occurred before, but was not minded. A thirt teen inch shell, thus thrown, came immediate ly opposite the place, where my head lay to be sure, the three feet wall was between us. The bursting report was tremendous, but it was heard in a profound sleep. Starting instantly, though unconscious of the cause, and running probably fifty yards, through untrod snow, three feet deep, to a coal house, a place quite arknown to me before: It was den or fifteen minuites before the extreme cold, restored that kind of sensibility, which enabled me to know my real Knowing nothing of the cause, the probable effect nor any thing of the consequences, which might follow from this involuntary exertion, it seemed to me to be a species of the panie,

Cr

M

tin

re

lov

ho

set

368

M

204

the

Ai

ed

ate

th

th

he

ro

me

ar

al

In

du

th

pr

Bt

at

which has been known to affect whole armies. The circumstance here related, caused a laugh against me; but it was soon discovered, that those of the soldiery, though wide awake, were as much panic stricken as myself. The laugh rebounded upon them. During this period, we had many bitter nights. To give you some idea of a Canada winter, allow me to relate an occurrence, which is literally genuine.

December 24th. One night, at the time of relief, a confidential person came from colonel Arnold, accompanied by an Irish gentleman, named Craig, directing the relieved guard to escort him to his own house, which stood between twenty and thirty paces from Palace-gate. Craig was a merchant of considerable wealth, and what was more, an excellent whigh He was expelled from his habitation because of his whigism, and took refuge in Arnold's quarters, Montgomery, by this time, had furnished us with personal clothing suitable to the climate, but there were a thousand other things wanting for comfortable accommodation. Many of these Mr. Craig possessed, and Arnold's luxurious cupidity desired. Craig's house was an extensive building, three stories high, with back buildings of an equal height, running far in the rear along the foot of the hill. This last building consisted of stores, which, as well as the house, was of brick work. We came to the back part of the house silently, and with the utmost caution. Mr. Craig, by a slight knock brought a trusty old negro to the door, who was the sole guardian of the house. The objects of Mr. Craig were frying-pans, skillets, and a great variety of other articles of ironmongery, together with cleths, flannels, linnens, &c. &c. &c. The party with

mies. Craig entered the house. As a man of confiaugh dence, and as a sentry, it became my business to that watch the Palace-gate. There was a clear Were moonlight, but it was exceedingly bleak. My augh place of observation was under a brick arch. . we over which were stores of Mr. Craig, perhaps less than eighty feet from Palace-gate. My n oegleves were good and well lined with fur, and my meckasias of the best kind, well staffed. Unof reseen—continually pacing the width of the arch: lonel My companions seemed to employ too much namtime. Same Frenchmen, of colonel Livingston's scort regiment, without our knowledge, had been beventy low Palace-gate marauding. Repassing the was a house we were at like so many hell-hounds, they t was set up a yelling and horrid din, which not only from seared our party, but alarmed the garrison itself. took My companions in the house (apprehensive of y, by a sally from Palace-gate,) fled, carrying all eloththey could. Though I heard the noise, the ere a flight of my friends was unseen, as they emergtable ed from the cellars. The noise and bustle creposated by the Canadians attracted the attention of the enemy. Large and small shells were three thrown in every direction, wherever a noise was equal heard in St. Roque. Having on a fine white foot blanket coat, and turning my cap of "beanet ed of rouge," inside out, the inside being white, made brick me, as it were, invisible in the snow. Under the ouse arch the conversation of the sentries, as it were. Mr. almost over my head, was very distinguishable. In this cold region, many reasons operate to inan of duce the placing two sentries at the same postfrythey enliven each other by conversing, and it other prevents the fatal effects which follow from oths. standing still in one position. Fifteen minutes, with

at this time, was the term of the sentrice, stand-

ing. The time of my standing under the arole seemed to be several hours, yet honor and duty required perseverance. At length, being wearied out-going to the back door of the house and knecking no whisper could be heard withinthe old negro was soundly asleep in his bombproof shell. At this moment those Canadians ran past the gateway again, with their usual noisy jabber; to me, in my deserted state, it seemed a sally of the enemy. There was no outlet but by the way we came, which seemed hazardous. Running gun in hand into a large enclosure, which was a garden of Mr. Craig's: here was a new dilemma. There was no escape but by returning to the house or climbing a palisade twenty feet high. The latter was prefered; but my rifle was left within the enclosure, as no means could be fallen upon to get it over the stockade. The guard-house was soon reach ed. One of the sergeants kindly returned with me to assist in bringing over my gun. It was grasped in extacy: Alas! the determination never to part with it again, but with life, was futile. While in the enclosure, going from and returning to it, we were assailed with grape-shot and shells, not by any means aimed at us, for the enemy knew not that we were there, but was intended to disperse those vociferous and vile Canadians, and it had the effect. They were as cowardly as noisy. The cohorn shells were handsomely managed. They usually burst at fifteen or twenty feet from the earth, so as to scatter their destructive effects more widely. Again coming to the guard-house, my immedia ate friends all gone, I ran thence to our quarters about two miles, with great speed. This was about three o'clock in the morning. Comwith hou disc any kne ony latin the terv from my then tack while

not and were tran the unw spiri Cha bec, Cap

indu

cil o led,) ntive very aty

ied

md

nb-

ans

it

no

4 5

apo

ali-

er-

ro, ver

ch=

ith

vas Ved

ile.

ing

und

the

in-

Ca-

25

at

to

ly.

di-

T

riv

ing to quarters, my feet and hands were numbed. without ever having during those many dreary hours, been sensible of the cold of It was soon discovered that they were frozen. Pulling of my leggins, de and immerging my feet and legs know deep in the snow at the door, rubbing with my hands a few minutes; som chased a recirculation of the blood, the hands were testored by the act. For fifteen, and even twenty years afterwards, the intolerable effects of that night's frost were most sensibly felt. The soles of my feet, particularly, the prominencies, were severly frombitten and much inflamed: so it was as to my hands: "But it was very remarkable that there subsequent annual painings, uniformly attacked me in the same month of the year in which the enuse occurred school of sline and vices

On the night of the 20th, or 21st of December, a snow storm, driving fiercely from the north-east. induced the noble Montgomery, to order an attack on the fortress. Our force altogether, did not amount to move than eleven hundred menand many of these, by contrivances of their own. were in the hospital, which, by this time, was transferred to the numery. The storm abatedthe moon shone, and we retired to repose, traly unwillingly: We had caught our commander's spirit who was anxious, after the capture of Cliambles, St. Johns, and Montreal, to add Quebecasa prime trophy to the laurels already won. Captain Smith, the head of our messy as captain. had been invited to general Montgomery's council of officers, (note under that grade being culled;) like most of uninstructed men, he was talkativerand what is much worse in military affaired very communicative. I believe blushing for lowed the intelligence he gave me the idea of

impropriety of condact in him, deeple impress ed my mind. The whole plan of the attack on the two following days, was known to the meunest man in the army. How it was disclosed, is undertain, unless by the fatuity of the captuing One Simpleton, a sergeant in the troops which accompanied Montgomery, deserted from the guard at the suburbs of fit. John's, and disable of to dur face the purport of our schones; his dezertion caused much anxiety. The general prudently gave out that it was by command, he would return soon with intelligence. "This was delieved generally of The latter information came to my knewledge some months afterwards, when as prisonery The relation of Smith to most perfect an my memory. Youth's seldem forget their juvenile impressions at was thin if That "we of Aracld's corps, accompanied by capstain Lang's York artillerists, should assail the Mower town, on the side of St. Reque: general Montgomery was to attack the lower town by the way of cane Diamond which is on the & margin of the St. Lawrence. A false attack so was to be made eastwardly of St. John's gate. "When Monigomery and Arneld conjoined in the lower town, then the priorte, the women " and the children, were to be gathered and intermingled with the troops, and an assault be semade on the upper town." Visionary as this mode of attack was, from what ensued it is sincerely my belief that Smith was correct in his information, as to the plan suggested by the reneral In these turbulent times, men of gallantry, week as Montgomery, were imperiously necessitated to keep up their own fame and the spirits of the people, to propose and to hazard measured even to the confines of imprudence.

The THO A Total Nex sho on't the ting Date enli Re e gen cast Infly eith and BOTT of n pres eer dece alre men

of I seve as The ligh offic vari hou

for:

Mor

LOD.

10

ing

hieb

the

pru-

ame

hen

DE: SE

ryet Cliat

can-

the

eral

n by

the

tack rate.

d in

mon

din-

It be

this

it is

et in

gal-

usly the

zard

nce.

There was another circumstance which induced our brave and worthy general, to adopt active and dangerous means of conquest. Many of the New-England troops had been engaged on very short enlistments, some of which were to expire on the first of Junuary, 1779. The patriotism of the summer of seventy-five, seemed almost extingulated in the winter of seventy-six. The patriotic officers made every exertion to induce enlistments, but to no purpose. We, of the "rifle corps," readily assented to remain with the general, though he should be deserted by the eastern men, yet this example had no manner of influence on the generality. The majority were either farmers or pailors, and some had wives and children at home. These, and other reas som, perhaps the austority of the winter, and the harshness of the service, caused an obstinger of mind, which would not submit to patriotic representation. Besides the smallpox, which had een introduced into our cuntonments by the indecorous, yet fasginating arts of the enemy, had already begun its ravages. This temper of the men was well known to the general.

It was not until the night of the thirty-first of December, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five, that such kind of weather ensued as was considered favorable for the assault. The forepart of the night was admirably enlightened by a luminous moon. Many of us, officers as well as privates, had dispersed in various directions among the farm and tippling houses of the vicinity. We well know the signal for rullying. Phis was no other than a snow-storm. About 12 o'clock P. M. the heaves

references on beside of the West of the Relation of the Relation

was overcast. We rapaired to quarters By a o'clock we were accounted and began our march. The storm was outrageous, and the cold wind extremely biting. In this northern country the snow is blown horizontally into the faces of tracted and most occasions—this was our case.

rop

long

The

BAB

all.

unli

Y

whi

sion

tack

othe

me.

the

pers

the

and

100

Yard

out

ebai

obta

in I

and

orig

DOSC

for

The

enen

rene

A.mn

January 1st. When we came to Craig's house. near Palace-gate, a hovrible roar of asimon teck place, and a ringing of all the bells of the city. which are very numerous, and of all sizes. At nold, heading the forlorn hope, advanced, perhaps, one hundred yards, before the main body. After these, followed Lamb's artillerists. Morgan's company, led in the secondary party of the column of infantry. Smith's followed, headed by Steele, the captain, from particular causas, being absent. Hendrick's company succeeded, and the eastern men, so far as known to me, followed in due order. The snow was deeper than in the fields, because of the nature of the ground. The path made by Arnold, Lamb, and Morgan, was almost imperceptible, because of the fulling snew; covering the locks of our guns; with the lappets of our coats, holding down our heads, (for it was impossible to bear up our faces, against the imperious storm of wind and snow.) we ran along the foot of the bill in single file. Along the first of our run, from Palace gate, for several hundred paces, there stood a range of insulated buildings, which seemed to be store-houses, we passed these quickly in single file, pretty wide apart. The interstices were from thirty to fifty yards. In these intervals: we received a tremendous fire of musket ry from the ramparts above us. Here we lost some brave men, when powerless to return the salutes we received, as the enemy was covered

by his impregnable defences. They were even sightless to us, we could see nothing but the blaze from the muscles of their muskets.

eb.

ind

the

Title

H to to

2005

ook

ity,

Ar-

BOE

ody.

lor-

of of

and-

aug-

n to

mod

the

and

0.05

unsa

BUP

our

and

sin-

d a

l to sin-

cer

ter-

the

red

A number of vessels of various sizes. lav. along the beach, moored by their hawsers or cables to the houses. Pacing after my leader, licutement Steele, at a great rate, one of those ropus took me under the chin, and cast me headlong down a declivity of at least fifteen feet. The place appeared to be either a drydock, or a sawpit. To My descent was terrible ; gun and all was involved in a great depth of snow. Most unlückily, however, one of my knees received a violent contusion on a piece of spraggy ice which was covered by the mow. On like occasions, we can scarce expect in the harry of attack, that our intimates should attend to any other, than their own concerns. Mine went from me, regardless of my fate. Scrabbling out of the eavity, without assistance, divesting my person, and gun of the snow, and limping into the line, it was attempted to assume a station and preserve it. These were none of my friends they knew me not. We had not gone twenty yards, in my hobbling gait, before I was thrown out and compelled to await the arrival. of a charm in the line, where a new place might be obtained. Men in affairs such as this, seem in the main, to lose the compassionate feelings and are averse from being disledged from their original stations. We proceeded rapidly, exposed to a long line of fire from the garrison, for now we were unprotected by any buildings. The fire had slackened in a small degree. The enemy had been partly called off to resist the general, and strengthen the party opposed to Arnold in our front. Now we saw colonel Arnold returning, wounded in the log and supported by two gentlemen, a parson Spring was one, and in my belief, a Mr. Ogden, the other. Arnold called to the troops, in a cheering voice, as we passed, urging us forward, yet it was abservable among the soldiery, with whom it was my misfortune to be now placed; that the coa lonel's retiring damped their spirits. A cant term "We are sold," was repeatedly heard in many parts throughout the line. Thus proceeding enfladed by an animated but lessened are, we came to the first barrier, where Arnold had been wounded in the onset. This centest had lasted, but a few minutes, and was some what severe, but the energy of our men prevailed. The embrasures were entered when the enemy were discharging their guns. The guard, consisting of thirty persons, were either taken or fled, leaving their arms behind them. At this time, it was discovered that our guns were useless, because of the damphess." The enow, which lodged in our fleecy coats, was melted, by the warmth of our bodies. Thence came that disaster. Many of the party, knowing the circumstance, threw aside their own, and seized the British arms. These were not only elegant, but were such, as befitted the hand of a real soldier. It was said, that ten thousand stand of such arms. had been received from England, in the previous summer for arming the Canadian militia. Those people were loath to bear them in opposition to our rights: From the first barrier to the second, othere was a circular course along the sides of houses, and partly through a street, probably of three hundred yards, or more. This second barrier, was erected across, and near the mouth of a narrow

opei bod mos the Lynn ur,) Wa. TOCK line. mak arig was. of th dast atte on t such bare lowe othe gan, eron barr high but The vare the heig

by

calle

nier.

DIUS

up

Was

ner

ice.

حوام

WES

ant

ard

DFO.

ned

old

tent

mer

DEO

hen

Pho

her

em:

uns

Phe

WAR

nce

OW-

and

vine

d of

Land

ro m

ing

oath

rom.

5' 8

run-

was.

rom.

street adjacent to the foot of the hill, which opened into a larger, leading soon into the main body of the lower town. Here it was, that the most sarious contention took place: this became the hone of strife. The admirable Montgomery, by this time, (though it was unknown to us,) was no more; you we expected momentaris ly, to join him. The firing on that side of the fortress occased, his division fell under the command of a colenel Campbell, of the New-York line, a worthly as chief, who retreated, without making an effort, in pursuance of the general's original plans. The inevitable consequence. was that the whole of the forces on that side of the city, and those, who were opposed to the dastardly, persons employed to make the false attacks, embodied and came down to oppose our division. Here was sharp shooting. We were on the disadvantageous side of the barrier, for angh a purpose. Confined in a narrow street: hardly more than twenty feet wide, and on the lower ground, scarcely a ball, well simed of otherwise, but must take effect upon us. Morgan, Hendricks, Steele, Humphreys, and growd of every class of the army, had gathered isto the narrow pass, attempting to surmount the barrier, which was about twelve or more feet high, and so strongly constructed, that nothing but artillery, could effectuate its destruction. There was a construction, afteen or twenty yards, within the barrier, upon a rising ground, the cannon of which much overtopped the height of the harrier, hence, we were assailed, by grape shot in abundance. This erection we called the platform. Again, within the than rier, and close in to it, were two ranges of musketeers, armed with musket and bayonet,

ready to receive those, who might venture the dangerous leap. Add to all this, that the enomy occupied the upper chambers of the houses. in the interior of the barrier, on both sides of the street. from the windows of which, we became fair marks. The enemy, having the advantage of the ground in front, a vast superiority of numbers, dry and better arms, gave them an inresistible nover, in so narrow a space. Hum phrey's upon a mound, which was speedily creeted, attended by many brave men, attempted to stale the barriory but was compelled to retreat by the formidable phalanx of bayonets within and the weight of fire, from the platform and the buildings. Morgan, brave to temerity. stormed and raged, Hendricks, Stoele, Nichola Humphreys, equally brave, were sedate, though under a tremendous fire. The platform which was within our view, was evacuated by the acc curacy of our fire, and few persons, dared venture there again. Now it was, that the necessi sity of the occupancy of the houses, on our side of the barrier, became apparent. Orders were given by Morgan, to that effect We entered this was near daylight. The houses were a shelter, from which we could fire with much accuracy. Yet, even here, some valuable lives were lost. Hendricks, when aiming his vifle at some prominent persons died by a estrageling ball. through his heart. He staggered a few feet linekwards, and fell upon a bed, where he in stantly expired. He: way an ornament of cur little reciety The amiable Humphreys died by a like kind of wound, but it was in the street before we entered the buildings. Many other brave men fell at this place, among these were licuterant: Cooper, of Connecticut, and perhaps

fifty DIEV man Ofus hins: shat. gers tain amor whol form 96; mg 4 ear of su temp situd the : uBon tion, ly los made at th Palac US U quen cent: ico fore dang while seque in ru up b

dang

tively

Alto

ene-

Lace,

DE LOIL

be-

rante

ty of

n int

IL HOA

ed:to

peet.

thins

rity

holas

ongh

hich

B 863

Yen-

BCOBA

side

were

od

dad

ceu-

wend

omo

ball

feet

vair d

OWN

died

neen

rero

lifty or sixty non-commissioned officers, and privates. The wounded, were numerous, and many of them dangerously so. Captain Lamb of the York artillerists, had nearly one half of his: face carried away, by a grape or cannister. shut. My friend Steele, lost three of his fingers; as he was presenting his gun to fire; captain Hubbard and lieutenant Fiedle, were also among the wounded. When we reflect upon the whole of the dangers at this barricade, and the farmidable force. that came to " annoy us, it is wo-"matter of surprise, that so many should es-4 cape death and wounding, as did. All hope of success, having vanished, a retreat was contemplated, but hesitation, uncertainty, and a lassitude of mind, which generally takes place, in the affairs of men, when we fail in a project. upon which, we have attached much expectation, now followed. That moment was foolishly lost, when such a movement might have been made with tolerable success. Captain Laws, at the head of two hundred men, issuing from Palace-gate, most fairly and handsomely cooned us up. Many of the men, aware of the consequences, and all our Indians and Canadians, fexcept Natanis and another,) escaped across the ice, which covered the bay of St. Charles, before the arrival of captain Laws. This was a dangerous and desperate adventure, but worthwhile the underteking, in avoidance of our subsequent sufferings. Its desperateness, consisted in running two miles across shoal ice, thrown up by the high tides of this latitude—and its danger, in the meeting with air holes, deceptively covered by the bed of snow. There is a second of the secon

See general Nichol's letter.

Ca

An

gou Or

Car

the

Whi

hos

rou

of i

hon

frie

and

of a

dead

froi

mar

mor

TUC.

the:

larg

whe

whe

into

find

OF:

DALE

enec

thou

is Speaking circumspectly, yet it must be admitted conjecturally, it seems to me, that in the whole of the attacks of commissioned officers, we had six killed, five wounded, and of non-nommissioned and privates, at least one hundred and fifty killed, and fifty or sixty wounded. Of the enemy, many were killed and many more wounded, comparatively, than on our side, taking into view the disadvantages we laboured under; and that but two occasions happened when we could return their fire, that is, at the first and second barriers. Neither the American account of this affair, as published by congress, nor that of air Guy Carleton, admit the loss of either side to be so great as it really was, in my estimation. It seems to be an universal practice among belligerants of all nations, to lessen the number of the slain of the side of the party which reports the event, and to increase it on the part of the enemy. Having had pretty good opportunities of forming a just opinion on the subject, it is hoped that gentlemen who have thought or written differently, will not disdain to listen to my argument. As to the British; on the platform they were fair objects to us. They were soon driven thence by the acuteness of our shooting. which in our apprehension must have destroyed many. Perhaps there never was a body of men associated, who better understood the use and manner of employing a rifle, than our corps: which by this time of the attack, had their guns in good order. When we took possession of the houses, we had a greater range. Our opportunities to kill, were enlarged. Within one hundred yards, every man must die. The British, however, were at home—they could easily drag their dead out of sight, and bear their wounded

mit-

the

WE

BOMI-

end

f. the

und-

into

: and

ebuld

scond

fthis

if sir

de to

ation.

bel-

ber of

ports

of the

mities

it is

writ-

o my

tform

100n

oting,

royed

f mep

e and

corps :

guns of the

partu-

hun-

ritish.

drag

unded

to the hospital. It was the poverse with me Captain Prentis, who commanded the provest guards, would tell me of seven or eight killed. and fifteen or twenty wounded. Opposed to this. the sentries, (who were generally Irishmen. that guarded no with much simplicity, if not honesty.) frequently admitted of forty or fifty killed, and many more wounded. The latter assertions accorded with my opinion. The reasons for this belief are these .. When the dead, on the following days, were transported on the carioles, passed our habitation for deposition in the "dead house," we observed many bodies, of which none of us had any knowledge; and again, when our wounded were returned to us from the hospital, they uniformly spoke of being surrounded there, in its many chambers, by many of the wounded of the enemy. To the great honor of general Carleton, they were all, whether friends or enumies, treated with like attention and humanity. The reason why the wounded of our side bore so small a proportion to the dend, seems to be this: In the long course we res from Palane gate to the first borrier, we last many men who were killed outright, but many more died, who were merely wounded, yet in such a manner, as in a milder region, to make the case a aurable one. A blow from a ball on large as that of a musket, stuggers a man whether the wound be in the arm; leg on elsewhere; if in staggering, he falls, he comes down into a deep bed of snow, from which a bale man finds it very difficult to extriente himself. Fire or ten minutes struggling in such a bed, benumbs the strongest man, as frequent experience has taught me; if the party be wounded. though but slightly, twenty or thirty minutes

will kill him, not because of the severity of the wound, but by the intensity of the frost. These are my opinions; grounded on a tolerably distinet and securate knewledge of particular cases, which occurred in the first part of the attack, and a variety of information obtained afterwards from individual sufferers, who were persons of credibility, rescued from death by the humane activity of governor Carleton. About 9 o'clock. A. M. it was apparent to all of us, that we must surrender. It was done. On this occasion, my friend general F. Nichols, by his own native spirit, perseverance and determined bravery, obtained an honorable distinction, and acknowledgment from a brave and distinguished enemy. It enhances his merit, and the boon, (when we reflect that that enemy was no other than general Carleton.) an ornament, such as would grace any nation, whether in the worst or best of times. Some privates came to lieutenant Nichols, and demanded his sword; the requisition was peremptorily denied, though there was great risk in the refusal. He retained his sword, till meeting with captain Endesly of the enemy, to whom it was surrendered; but with the exaction of a promise that it should be returned when he, the captive, should be released. In the August following, before our embarkation for New-York, captain Endesly waited on lieutenant Nichols, and in the presence of all the American officers, re-delivered the sword. under the assurance, that it was by the permission and command of general Carleton. This trait in the character of Carleton, adds to the celebrity of his derivation, and manner of thinking, and casts, into a dark ground, the characters of most of the principal British officers,

pa en te

De WB 28 in pe ar COL re CO ou sta 9-1 the did of. eid un Di the of . Libe fice

the out ful the

wil

fiel

particularly the Scotch, who had much influcase in those days, and bore towards us an in-

the

hese

dis-

ases.

tack.

rards

ns of

mano.

lock,

must

is my

ative

v. ob-

now-

emy.

n we

gene-

grace

st of

Ni

sition

Was

l his

f the

with

e re-

ased.

arka

d on

f all

word.

rmis-

This

o the

hink-

araecers.

temperate hatred. The commissioned officers, and some of the cadets, were conducted to the sominary, a respectable building. It became my lot, in one way or other, to be lost in the crowd, and to be associated with the non-commissioned officers, in the company of some of whom, ardent and perilous duties had been undergone. These men are by no means to be lessened in character, by contrasting them with the levies made in Europe, or those made since that time in our own country. Many of our sergeants, and even of our privates, were, with good educations, substantial freeholders in our own country. Upon a former occasion, you were told the story of the respectable Dixon. He possessed, (if sordid wealth makes the man,) twofold the riches of his captain; and if it be permitted me to deeide upon the characters of men, five-fold his understanding, activity and spirit. Amiable Dixon! Many of these men, in the progress of the bloody scenes which ensued, became props of our glorious cause, in defence of our sacred liberfles. All could be named. Let a few suffice. Thomas Boyd, so often spoken of in the wilderness for his good humor, his activity and the intensity of his sufferings; struggled gloriously for his life as a captain, and died a dreadful death by the hands of the savages in 1779, in the expedition conducted by general Sullivan against the Six-nation indians. * Charles Porterfield the lost his life in the battle of Camden, when in the station of a colonel. Joseph Aston,

Sec Note VII.

pa

gy

of .

ma

WAS

an

eole

Wh

nan

Dro

den

seer

WAS

me

cers

s be

" YO

66 BD

of ti

my

Vagr

certa

knev

Eng

Geor

cons

term

nel A

pare

one o

see D

were

der o

of Lamb's, who served his country throughout the war, and was premoted to a majority. Doctor Thomas Gibson of Hendricks, who died in the performance of his duty, at the Valley Forge. in the winter of 1778. Robert Cunningham, a wealthy freeholder of Smith's, who here imbibed the seeds of that disorder, which, at too early an age, hurried him to the grave. He was a younger brother of that excellent citizen, and frequent representative of the people of the county of Luneaster, James Cunningham. In short, many others might be mentioned in the general, as worthy and well informed as their superiors, without, in anywise, imputing to the latter, in so saying, the slightest degree of disparagement. This will always be the case, when the great body of a nation rises in its strength to defend its rights. Those who understand the point in question, in a national dispute, and are most strongly impressed with its importance, will be the first to arm. This has been, and ever will be, the dispositions of men in all ages past or to come, whenever their privileges are invaded. Offices of prime importance, cannot be obtained by all. Men of talents, of genius and courage must step into subordinate stutions. Socrates, Algibiades and Demosthenes, fouglit in the raifks.

God in his great goodness grant, in the future vicissitudes of the world, that our countrymen, whenever their essential rights shall be attacked, will divest themselves of all party prejudice, and devote their lives and properties in defence of the sacred liberties of their country. Thout any view to emolument, but that which springs from glorious and honorable actions. Parton me for frequent digression, upon this audiect

particularly, as my whole soul was bound up in our cause, you must forgive me. The real apology is, we were, all of us, enthusiastic whigs.

ut

D6-

in

Ab-

rly

and the

In

heir

the dis-

asc.

its

un-

its

has en in

vile-

mec.

m05-

ture

men.

acklice.

enec

hout

rdon

ricot

When under guard, in the morning of the first of January, colonel M. Dougal, a Scotch gentleman, near noon, came to review us: his person was known to me at Detroit, as an intimate of an unele, three years before this time. The colonel was naturally polite and kind hearted. When it came to my turn to be examined, as to name, place of birth, &c. besides making the proper answers to his inquiries, I was emboldened to declare, that he was known to me. He seemed surprised, but not displeased: a request was immediately added, "that he would order me to be transferred to the quarters of the officers." "No, my dear boy," said he, " you had " better remain where you are; the officers, as "you are in rebellion, may be sent to England, "and there be tried for treason." The advice of this venerable veteran, made an impression on my mind, which was then agitated by a thousand yagrant thoughts, and involved in doubt and uncertainty as to our destination. We then well knew of the voyage of colonel Ethan Allen to England, and the manner of it; * and that of George Merchant, our fellow soldier, but the consequences were unknown. It became my determination to take the fatherly advice of colonel M'Dongal, for it was really delivered in the parental style, and to adhere to it. He brought one of his sons, whom I had formerly known, to see me on the following day. About mid-day we were escerted to a ruinous monastery of the order of St. Francis, called the Reguliers. It was

See Note VIII.

an finmense quadrangular building, containing, within its interior bounds, half an acre or more. of an area, which seemed to be like a garden or shrubbery. The monks, priests or what not, who inhabited the house, must have been few in number, as for my part, not more than half a dozen of distinct faces, came into my view while we staid here. We entered by the ground floor, (that is by the cellar,) the building on that side being built on the declination of the hill, which in this part of the city is very uneven. The apartments on our right, as we entered, seemed to be fifled with governmental stores, and of provisions of all kinds. They made us ascend a large staircase into an upper story, where we were complimented with two sides, or rather a part of each of the sides of the quadrangle. The whole building would have accommodated four thousand men. Monkish spirit must have been in high vogue, when so great a pile could be crected, merely from the aims of the people, and that too, for so egregiously absurd a purpose. The ranges of the rooms, though extensive in the length of the galleries, were small in their size, being scarcely more than ten by twelve or fourteen feet. The galleries were about twelve feet wide; many rooms were comfortable, others were dilapidated. Ten or a dozen of our poor fellows, were compressed into one of these small rooms. So much the better, as it served to keep them the warmer. Boyd. Cunningham, and a few of our intimates, took possession of a room near a large stove. The first week, we slept most uncomfortably. clous God! what did we not waffer.

It was now that we fully learnt the destinies of our dear and revered general, and his compa-

n or

not.

w in

df a vhile

door,

hich

The

d of

end a

e we

her a

The

four

been ld be

eople, pur-

all in

en by

Were

com-

a do-

etter, Boyd,

The

Gra-

tinies

mpa-

mions in death. But aflow me before the detail of that sad story, to give you an anecdote: The merchants of Quebec, like those of England and our country, are a spirited and generous seet in society: they applied to governor Carleton; and obtained leave, to make us a "new-year's gift." This turned out to be no other than a large butt of porter, attended by a proportionate quantity of bread and cheese. It was a present which exhilirated our hearts, and drew from us much thankfulness. We shared more than a pint per man.

General Montgomery had marched at the precise time stipulated, and had arrived at his destined place of attack, nearly about the time we attacked the first barrier. He was not one that would loiter. Colonel Campbell, * of the New-York troops, a large, good-looking man, who was second in command of that party, and was deemed a veteran, accompanied the army to the assault; his station was reurward, general Montgomery, with his aids, were at the point of the column.

It is impossible to give you a fair and complete idea, of the nature and situation, of the place solely with the pen—the pencil is required. As by the special permission of government, obtained by the good offices of captain Prentis, in the summer following; Boyd, a few others and myself, reviewed the causes of our disaster; it is therefore in my power, so far as my abilities will permit, to give you, a tolerable notion of the spet. Cape Diamond, nearly resembles the

This was not my friend Cel. Thomas Campbell of York, (Penn.) He was fighting the battles of our country at Sector.

reat jutting rock, which is in the narrows at Hunter's falls, on the Susquehanna. The rock. at the latter place, shoots out as steeply as that at Quebec, but by no mean forms so great an angle, on the margin of the river; but is more There is a stronger and more obvious difference in the comparison. When you surmount the hill at St. Charles, or the St. Lawrence side, which, to the eye are equally high and steep, you find on Abraham's Plains, and upon an extensive champaign country. They birds-eye view around Quebec, bears a striking conformity to the seites of Northumberland and Pittsburg, in Pennsylvania; but the former is on a more gigantic scale, and each of the latter want the steepness and craggyness of the back ground, and a depth of rivers. This detail, is to instruct you in the geographical situation of Quebec, and for the sole purpose of explaining the manner of general Montgomery's death, and the reasons of our failure. From Wolf's cove, there is a good beach, down to, and around "Cape Diamond." The bulwarks of the city. came to the edge of the hill, above that place. Thence down the side of the precipice, slantingly to the brink of the river, there was a stockade of strong posts, fifteen or twenty feet high, knit together by a stout railing, at bottom and top with pins. This was no mean defence, and was at the distance of one hundred yards, from the point of the rock. Within this palisade, and at a few yards from the very point itself, there was a like palisade, though it did not run so high up the hill. Again, within Cape Diamond, and probably at a distance of fifty yards, there stood a block-house, which seemed to take up the space, between the foot of the hill, and the pre-

alpit or I and lect, ita . it W COR acte favo form if no OHT BOW upen form fort WOT cont that with gun and ave mer did pali wet fou ma

his

in

get

of

ek.

hat

an

ore

ous

ur-

AW-

igh

and

hey

ing

and

on

ter

ick

of

ing

ind

ve.

nd

ty,

66.

k-

b.

nd

nd

m

le.

If.

un

d.

ro

B

8-7

cipitous bank of the river, leaving a cart way, or passage un each side of it. When heighths and distances are spoken of, you must recollect, that the description of Cape Diamond and its vicinity, is merely that of the eye, made as it were running, under the inspection of an officon. The review of the ground, our army had acted upon, was accorded us, as a particular favor. Even to have stopped the spaces in a formal manner, would have been dishonerable, if not a species of treason. A block-house if well constructed, is an admirable method of defence, which in the process of the war, to our cost, was fully experienced. In the instance now before us, (though the house was not built upon the most approved principles,) yet it was a formidable object. It was a square of perhaps forty or fifty feet. The large logs neatly squared, were tightly bound together, by deve-tail work. If not much mistaken, the lower story contained loop-holes for musketry, so narrow, that those within, could not be harmed from without. The upper story, had four or more port holes, for cannon of a large calibre. These guns were charged with grape or cannister shot, and were pointed with exactness towards the avenue, at Cape Diamond. The hero Montgemery came. The drowsy or drunken guard, did not hear the sawing of the posts of the first palisade. Here, if not very erroneous, four posts were sawed and thrown uside, so us to admit four men abreast. The column entered with a manly fortitude. Montgomery, accompanied by his aids, MrPherson and Cheeseman, advanced in front. Arriving at the second palisade, the general, with his own hands, sawed down two of the pickets, in such a manner, as to admit

Di blo

of.

ing

du

do

by

ilw

to

We

60

oui

jut

tre

ret

liv

ed

bot

ms

Cal

25

be

WA

CAS

Ke

WO

kin

it :

the

ing

vit

had

80.0

Mo

two men abreast. These sawed pickets, were close under the hill, and but a few yards from the very point of the rock, out of the view and fire of the enemy, from the block-house. Until our troops advanced to the point, no harm could ensue, but by stones thrown from above. Even now, there had been but an imperfect discovery. of the advancing of an enemy, and that only by the intoxicated guard. The guard fled, the general advanced a few paces. A drunken sailor returned to his gun, swearing he would not forsake it while undischarged. This fact is related from the testimony of the guard on the morning of our capture, some of those sailors being our guard. Applying the match, this single dischare, deprived us of our excellent commander.*

Examining the spot, the officer who excerted us, professing to be one of those, who first came to the place, after the death of the general. showed the position in which the general's body. was found. It lay two paces from the brink of the river, on the back, the arms extended-Cheeseman lay on the left, and McPherson on the right, in a triangular position. Two other brave men lay near them. The ground above described, was visited by an inquisitive eye, so that you may rely with some implicitness, on the truth of the picture. As all danger from without bad vanished, the government had not only permitted the mutilated palitades to remain, without renewing the enclosure, but the very sticks, sawed by the hand of our commander, still lay, streamed about the spot.

Colonel Campbell, appalled by the death of the general, retreated a little way from Cape-

See New 1X.

Were

from

w and

Until

could

Even

overy.

ily by

e gen-

sailor

d not

n the

sail

. this

ellent

orted

came

neral.

body.

ink of

ded_

on on

other

above

ve. so

go . Re

from

d not

o re-

it the

man-

18 39 28-58

th of

Cape-

Diamend, out of the reach of the cannon with block-house, and pretendedly called a council of officers, who, it was said, justified his receding from the attack. If rushing on, as military duty required, and a brave man would have done, the block-house might have been occupied by a small number, and was unassailable from without, but by cannon. From the block-house to the centre of the lower town, where we were, there was no obstacle to impede a force so powerful, as that under colonel Campbell.

Cowardice, or a want of good will towards our cause, left us to our miserable fate. A junction, though we might not conquer the fortress, would enable us to make an honorable retreat, though with the loss of many valuable lives. Campbell, who was ever after considered as a poltroon in grain, retreated, leaving the bodies of the general, M'Pherson and Cheeseman, to be devoured by the dogs. The disgust caused among us, as to Campbell, was so great as to create the unchristian wish, that he might be hanged. In that desultory period, though be was tried, he was acquitted; that was also the case of colonel Enos, who deserted us on the There never were two men more worthy of punishment of the most exemplary kind.

On the third or fourth of January, being as it were domesticated in the sergeant's mess, in the reguliers, a file of men headed by an officer; called to conduct me to the seminary. Adhering to the advice of colonel M'Dougal, the invitation was declined, though the hero Morgan, had solicited this grace from governor Carleton, and had sent me a kind and pressing message. My reasons, which were explained to Morgan, in addition to the one already given,

wh

ter

it

WO

der

rui

ife

láic

Bo

bla

rep

COL

on

wit

ed

wit

sol

ion

the

que

the

the

sol

mo

me

fine

rev

COD

of

Wel

if

Spe

fuli

ry

los

ene

overaced forcibly on my mind. Having lost all my elothes in the wilderness, except these on my back: and these acquired by the provident and gratuitous spirit of general Montcompry, baving remained at our quarters, and become a prey to the women and invalids of the army: nothing remained fitting me to appear in company anywhere. Additionally, it had become a resolution, when leaving Laneaster, as my absence would go near to break the hearts of my parents, never to break upon my worthy father's purse. Dire necessity comselled me to reseind this resolution in part, in the wilderness, but that circumstance, made me the more determined to adhere to the resolve afterwards. Again, my intimate friends were not in the seminary. Steele was in the hospital, and Simpson, by previous command on the charming Isle of Orteans, which, from its fruitfalness had become, as it were, our stone-house.* Add to all these reasons: it could not be said of the gentlemen in the tominary "they are my intimates," except as to captain Morgan, and lieutenant F. Nichols of Hendrick's Resides my leather small-clothes, all in fritters, had been east away, and a savage covering adopted, until more auspicious times came. But even new, an idea of escape and vengeance infamed the breasts of many, and we were here in a much superior situation for such a purpose. than that of the seminary. More of this hereafter. All those facts and circumstances, induced an evacion of the friendly relicitation of the kind-hearted Morgan.

On the third day of our capture, the generous Carleton despatched a flag to Arnold, to obtain

See Note X.

thone

pro-

lontand

alide

ne to

ally.

Lanreak

upen

com-

n the

e me

solve

Were

ospia the

ruit

10C.#

anid

y are

rgan,

tors.

ering

But

o in-

pese,

10F6+

in-

on of

eriond

btain

here .

what trifling baggage we had left at our quarters; mine was either forgotten, or miserable as it was, had been plundered; but as good luck would have it, the knapsack of of one Alexander Nelson of our company, who was killed when running to the first barrier, was disclaimed by all of our men. Your father in consequence, laid violent hands upon the spoil. It furnished Boyd and myself, with a large, but coarse blue blanket, called a "stroud," and a drummer's regimental coat. The blanket became a real comfort, the coat an article of barter. It was on this day, that my heart was ready to burst with grief, at viewing the funeral of our beloved general. Carleton had, in our former wars with the French, been the friend and fellowsoldier of Montgomery. Though political opinion, perhaps ambition or interest, had thrown these worthies, on different sides of the great question, yet the former, could not but honor the remains of his quondam friend. About noon. the procession passed our quarters. It was most solemn. The coffin covered with a pall, surmounted by transverse swords—was borne by men. The regular troops, particularly that fine body of men, the seventh regiment, with reversed arms, and searfs on the left elbow, accompanied the corpse to the grave. The funerals of the other officers, both friends and enemies. were performed this day. From many of us. it drew tears of affection for the defunct, and speaking for myself, tears of greeting and thankfulness, towards general Carleton. The soldie. ry and inhabitants, appeared affected by the loss of this invaluable man, though he was their enemy. If such men as Wusbington, Carleton and Montgomery, had had the entire direction M

of the adverse war, the contention, in the event, might have happily terminated to the advantage of both sections of the nation. M.Pherson, Cheeseman, Hendricks, Humphreys, were all

lat

my

the

bol

Wis

den

YET

tro

dea

Whi

and

unt

of t

bar

CAL

Men

the

just

66 ne

by .

We

The

mit

mer Our

bein trea

of t

oted

disnified by the manner of hurial.

On the same, or the following day, we were compelled, (if we would look,) to a more disguating and terturing sight. Many carioles, repeatedly one after the other, passed our dwelling loaded with the dead, whether of the assail. ants or of the garrison, to a place, emphatically, called the "dead house." Here the bodies vere heaped in monstrous piles. The horror of the sight, to us southern men, principally consisted in seeing our companions, borne to interment. uncoffined, and in the very clothes they had worn in battle , their limbs distorted in various directions, such as would ensue in the moment of death. Many of our friends and acquaintances were apparent. Poor Nelson lay on the top of half a dozen other bodies bis arms extended he wond his head, as if in the act of prayer, and one knee crooked and raised, scemingly, when he last gasped in the agonies of death. Curse on these civil wars which extinguish the sociabilities of mankind, and annihilate the strongth of nations. A flood of tears, was consequent. Though Mentgomery was beloved because of his manliness of soul, heroic bravery and snavity of manners; Hendricks and Humphreys, for the same admirable qualities, and especially for the endurances we underwest in conjunction, which enforced many a tear: still my unhappy and lost brethren, though in humble station, with whom that dreadful wild was penetrated, and from whom camo many attentions towards me forced melancholy sonsations. From what

ent,

age

OB.

ere

dia.

less

Wel-

lly,

rere

the

ated

ent.

HOFD

TOC-

t of

p, of

nded

and

hen

urso

ngth

cent.

o of

12 VI×

for

for

tion,

tion,

atedy

arda

vhat

is said relative to the " Bead-house," you might conclude that general Carleton was inhumane or hard-hearted. No such thing. In this northern latitude, at this season of the year, according to my feelings, (we had no thermometer,) the weather was so cold, as usually to be many degrees below o. A wound, if mortal, or even otherwise, easts the party wounded into the snow; if death should follow, it throws the sufferer late various attitudes: which are assumed in the extreme pain accompanying death. The moment death takes place, the frost fixes the fimbs in whatever situation they may then happen to be, and which cannot be reduced to decent order. until they are thawed. In this state, the bodies of the slain are deposited in the "dead-house," hard as ice. At this season of the year, the earth is frozen from two to five feet deep, imgenetrable to the best pick-axe, in the hands of the stoutest man. Hence you may perceive a justification of the "dead-house." It is no new observation, "that climates form the man-"ners and habitudes of the people."

On the next day, (January 4th.) we were visited by colonel Maclean, an old man, attended by other officers, for a psculiar purpose, that is, to ascertain who among us were born in Europe. We had many Irishmen, and some Englishmen. The question was put to each; those who admitted a British birth, were told they must serve his mujesty in colonel Maclean's regiment, a new corps, called the "emigrants." Our poor fellows, under the fearful penalty of being carried to Britain, there to be tried for treason, were compelled by necessity; and thany of them did enlist. Two of them, very brave men, Edward Cavenaugh and Timothy Conner,

deserve to be named, because of a particular occurrence which happened shortly afterwards: These two men, among others, called upon me for my advice how to set. Being, at that time, neither a lawyer nor a casuist, they had my opipion according to the dictates of nature, and some slight reading. That is, that they should enlist, for a constrained oath, as theirs would be, could not be binding on the conscience : and by all means to join our army as soon as practicable. They enlisted under the notion, that the oath was non-obligatory, and a hope of a speedy return to their sweet-hearts and wives. Allow me here to recount, by anticipation, the residue of the adventures of "honest Ned." It is due to him, for he saved my life, and that of Simpson, on the "Dead river." Tewards the end of January, Cavenaugh and Conner, happened to compose a part of the same guard at Palace-gate, where the walls are from thirty to forty feet high, independently of the declivity of the hill. Cavenaugh was stationed as a sentry in conjunction with one of the British party. Conner had procured a bottle of rum; coming to the station, he drank himself. and presented the bottle to the British sentry. While the latter was in the act of drinking, Cavenaugh gave him a push with the butt of his musket, which stunned and brought him to the earth. Taking his arms, they sprung over the wall into a bed of snow, perhaps twenty five feet deep. This averment concerning the depth of the anow, may appear problematical, as we know nothing like it in our climate. Form no definitive opinion until you have heard the reasons why it does happen. As you may recollect say a Boy and Cay, spring and Tanothy Conner,

of.

691

sci

MA

ma Th

Yol

to

the

not ear

We

the

is d

ing

ain. Th

ma

of :

for

fer

the

rds:

me

ime,

opi-

and

ould

ould

and

acti-

that

of a

ives.

tion.

od."

and

To-

Con-

same

from

the

Bri-

e of

self.

ntry.

Ca-

f his

o the

r the

feet

th of

know

efini-

ascns

plicet

68" WEST

oned

several instances in this memoir, where the ayperity of the Unobec winter is intimated, and o description of its effects attempted—such as frequent anowatorms and fierce winds. In the month of January, particularly, when the snow has increased to a depth of seven feet over the face of the country, not with standing the shining if the aun, the cold is so great, that those winds frive the snow daily, against the high ramparts of the pity, where it forms a compact mass the hast stratum being light and dry, as the finese sand, which may be whirled by the wind. Caves taugh and Conner leaped mid-deep into such a acit bad. Their disadvantage consisted in sink. ing too deep withe heighth of the leap, plunging them deeper than ordinary walking would do. made it difficult for them to extricate themselves. The relief guard came in time to give them a volley as they were scampering away. Thanks to God, my worthy Irishmen escaped unharmed. though as they passed through St. Roque, they were complimented by several discharges of cannister and grape-shot. This was the first notice we had of the escape of our daring friends. We heard next morning, all the minutize from those who guarded up. Cavenaugh is still aliveis lubertous, and has a large family of children, who are respectable in their way. You cannot conceive the joyousness of my heart, when hearing of him, in my peregrinations a few years since, in the mountainous parts of York county. The pittance then spared him, it is hoped will make you never the poorer. The assembly of Ponsylvania have granted kim a pension. for which that honorable body have my most fervent, blessings. Old age and decrepitude by the extremity of our enferings, is brought upon

M 2

us, long before the ordinary allotments of mature. We served our country faithfully, and at this late day, it is really pleasant to observe the spirit of the public, inclined to compensate the veterans of 1775 and 1776. So much for my preserver "Honest Ned," which spithet he still bears among his neighbors, by whom, bating a venial vice, he is esteemed. Timothy Conner, ou the contrary, possessing the art of acquiring wealth, married, had a competency, but lost it subsequently by his vices, which bore a strong

ře

1

of

al

gu

T

in

th

affaity to gross criminality, in the same and

By the middle of January, we were settled down into a state something like household order: those who could economics, fared tolerably well, though they could have used more. Our duily provision consisted of a hisquit made of a coarse meal, from comething like our chopped presvery often chaff or straw, half an inch he length, was found in this species of bread. A biscuit of the size of a cake of gingerbread, new sold with us for a cent, was the daily allowance of this article; half a pound of perk, or three quarters of a pound of beef, though these word much salted, even so as to be uncomfertable—they were of Irish proparation, perhaps for the sea-service: a competent allowance of butter. originally fine, yet now rancid scandles, molasses, and even vinegar; this last article, so long as it could be afforded us, was a preservative from the disorders which unwittingly we were imbibing daily. Knewing the difficulties under which the garrison lay-foes at the gates, and an uncertainty of succour; the governor was thought of by mp, with similar allowances, that aught to be made to our own generals, in cirsuperinger of sych pinching necessity. From

THE -

diat.

N OW

4.10

rong

-0F=

able

Our

of a

THEE.

1 11

John Miles

low

. OF

heno

-ta-

a for

tter:

olas:

ativo

Were

wand

Was

that

dir.

370m

nder

all information attainable on our part, we mene as well treated as those of the garrison, who lived on this same kinds of food, except as to liquer, which deprivation was more heneficial than injurious to our men. It is grateful to my heart, now to remember and repeat; the benevolent according this mildhow and humanity ereated in my mindy towards the virtuous, the uning his and venerable Carleton. Ho was a genuing representative of the gentility of the Ivish nation, which is a deservedly famous for the production of real herees, patriotic statesmen, and generocity and cuavity of manners. "He was of great sandons, aprightness and house, and full of the spirit of philanthropy, which warks the real gentlemans He made we several visits, in all of which he occured, merely to have a solicitude for our welfure, without any sinister view, such as a reduction from our principles, &c. That he granted us every accommodation, his trying vituation authorized, there can be no doubt. Bhertly after the time new spoken of we were conducted to the Dauphin jail. Before we quit the reguliers, admit me to state to you something more, relating to our manner of living there. My youthful appetite required and demanded a greater quantity of food than we then enjoyed. We wanted spoons, not only is our own most, but throughout the whole cornel There was no money among us to purchase such an implement, and if there had been, and opportunity had offered, it is likely the jealousy of goveryment, would have deprived us of them, if formed of metal of any kinds

Wood, a birch stick, the only piece of hard wood in the loudy was suggesty haid held of, and borne

OH

W

a

kn

CR

in

M

of

th

Wi

all

WE

m

ke

in

to

Du

WE

lin

th

wi

1.5

ba

do

ex

po

04

le

po

be

to the mess room; from this, a wooden mone was soon formed for my own use. Lobecouse made a part of our diurnal food. This term! though vulgar, conveys to one, who, when hund gry, has tasted the dish, some agreeable idensi Among soldiers and sailors it in esteemed count to the molla podrida of the Spaniards and nearly so to the Wenerk and over of the Gore mans; it is certainly more nourithing than what the latter eall as water soup, and even someal soup!". We put our vile biscuit into a tin vessel. with a sufficient quantity of water, and permited it to stew on the stone, until there was a perfeet mucilage, some thin slices of bacon fut. (the reserve of the last meal,) were then added to some of the skimmings of the bailers, but most usually, the rancid butter, (which was thus made palatable) when these substances were well incorporated with the biscuit; a few spoon-fulls of molasses finished the dish. This was the ordinary breakfast, and a good one, when we could spoon it into our mouther My spoon therefore. was an article in great demand, and of prime negessity. The production of one spoon, created a desire for more; they were manufactured in abundance, by the means of two knives a great and a small, but always disposed of for hiscuit. Booons were made as large as small ladles, some with a deer at full stretch, a hound pursuing an Indian sitting a beaver and wenty other devices were invented, and telerably well carved. Some came to five biscuits, some to ten, and one in particular at twenty, which my friends, thought worthy of the acceptance of the governor, but care was taken not to present it. Boyd and Cunningham carefully furnished the woods. Thus we could exist protty well on 1000

ouse.

lond.

qual

and Gors

what

meat

58614

white:

ftha

HOD.

most

k in-

ordi-

ould.

fore, rime

rent-

ured

i for

llame

ound

rably

ome.

hich

cer#£

gent.

our slender dist. But we had other resources, which were by no means neglected. Henry Crone, a well bred young man, descended from a worthwand respectable family of York county! Pennsylvania, much my senior, but who was known to me during his apprenticeship at Lancaster, had dissipated a good fortung at the gaming tables; he was a regreant of Hendrick ... Miserable as was our predicament, the demon of play had intruded itself among us, though there was neither money nor clothing, but that upon our backs, and our daily provisions to sport with. The play was for bisquit, and most usually at a game called "all-fours," in which Crone was a real adept. He was a droll dog, and much inclined to play with and beat the Yankees, as he termed them. Many mornings, being compelled by the inclemency of the season, to leave our uncomfortable bed, pacing the avepues in front of our cells for exercise and warmth, drawing aside the curtain of the gambling room door, which was no other than a thread-bare blanket. Crone was seen and heard, with bleared eyes and a vociferous voice, after a night's sitting, contending for a biscuit, with as much spirit and heat, as most probably he had done in former times for fifty or a hundred dollars. The passion of gaming, is almost an inexplicable trait in the human character, the poor, the rich, the savage and the civilized, are equally its devotees. The greatest and the least are alike subject to its fascinations. Crone. poor dog, was one of the devoted.

Montgomery, in his care for Arnold's party, besides an excellent blanket coat, had assigned to each man a new red regimental coat of the seventh, or some other regiment, stationed in

W

COL

LW

due

me

the

fro

the

\$110

tg:

to

YP

tio

GH!

Wi

We

aff

to

WE

tie

bla

de

tis

the

for

do

the upper country. This elothing had been seized at Montreal. Crone, in the divisor, had fored well. He had obtained a large superfine broad cloth coat, such as is worn by the sergeant major of the British army, which " fitted him like a shirt." He was so totally devoid of care, that he never once applied to the taylors of the army, who were employed by the public, to fit the coat to his back, and to sew it reguharly. What was still more laughable, he had no pockets to this coat, unless you may call the Rannel such, which interiorly lined the lappets, and bore the appearance of large bags dangling about his hocks. Crone was facetious and clever: he had an affection for me. Often about daylight he would come to my blanket and waken me, and shake the lappets of his coat. He would say "Damme Juck, here's some thing for you," and would force upon me, ten, fifteen, and several times, even thirty biscuits. With all his vices he bore a great share of my esteem, for the goodness of his heart. When ill-luck occurred, there was a refunding on my part, but it soldom happened. Our other resource was William M.Coy, a sergeant of Hemirieks an excellent elerk, who came into favor of the Governor, by giving to major Murray of the garrison, a genuine copy of his journal of the route, through the wilderness into Canada. He was a sedate and sensible man. He was installed welerk of the kitchen, and put me much in mind of Gil Blas clerk. The cook, whom M.Coy putronized, was a very Boniface. in accomplishments and a Sancho Panza in rotundity. He was of Thayer's or Dearborne's company. Believe me, that these two men, were sourted by our hungry wights among the soldiebeen

had

tge-

rted

id of

blie.

egu-

the

lup-

bags

ious

field

nket Nis

ere's

mer

bis

hare

eirt. ding

ther

t of

into

Mur-

urb.

He

put

face

me's

were

ry, with as much eagerness and solicitude, and often sycophancy, as would have been the case had they been the ministers of a great state. What eguld you suppose to be the object of such servility? To explain.—The boiling utensils, were two very large coppers. A boiling of pork, produced a great quantity of liquid fat, which the men called sluck. The skimmings constituted the importance of the cook, who made a profit from it, by selling it to certain tradesmen of the city. A half pint of this slush, was a good succedancum for better food, to a mean of six staut mon. It, with the molasses, formed an exectiont lobseques. Olegginous matter, next to bread is however, the great support of the animal functions, and even superior to bread to sustain life, and gratify the palate. Here you see the real ground of the causes of distinctions in society. The each possessing this perquisite, commanded his applicants for additional food, with an unwarrantable austority. As to our mess, it was strong in habits of intimacy with McCoy, who was one of us. The cook was far below our notice. Friend McCoy, gave na every advantage, our melanchaly situation afforded him. This minute information is given to you, to inspire you with a disgust, towards war of any kind. As to my sons, if the liberties of our country ever be invaded, it is humbly hoped, under the protecting hand of Providence, that they will always be ready and actives to rally round the standard of Ercodoms the principles of which, we derived from our Lorefathers, whose blood freely flowed in its defence.

Coming to the Dauphin jail, escorted by the military, we found it well accommodated for

le,

to

te

ph

th

OF

SUC

the

We

Yar

tim

the

yar

and

lea

Wel

Bu

the

ga

ab

wh

Dri

tro

vel

out

rei

eri

our lodgment. There were four rooms below. and as many above stairs; all capacious and welf supplied with births or bulks, in the common method of barracks. "Our company taking the right, our precedency in the procession gave us, assumed the possession of a room, in the third story, which was in truth the very best. Morgan's, took a room immediately below us: Hendrick's one adjoining: but remember, that at this time, we were reduced most lamentably by killed, wounded and missing. Many were in the hospitals Out of sixty-five, who came on Abraham's Plains, in November, we had scarcely more than thirty, left with us in prison. The fire of the enemy and disease had so thinned us. Mergan's gallant men fared worse. Like the eastern people before, and at that period, they detested the introduction of the small. pox into their country, by inoculation. Now they were its victims. Less than twenty-five of the privates of that company, regained their native homes. They were originally, as elegant a body of men, as ever came within my view. To use the style of my friend Simpson, "they were " beautiful boys, who knew how to handle, and is aim the rifle." Indeed many of them, adroit young men, courageous and thorough going, became the subjects of death, by that virulent discase, both without and within the city. We. of Pennsylvania, had no fears from that source. This disease had visited us in youth, either was turally or by innoculation. This observation. which is a serious one, should convey to your minds, the immensity of the discovery of the innoculation of the kine-pock, by doctor Jenner. The discovery of the causes of lightning, its dreadful effects, the means of avoiding its power,

* See Note XI.

by the eclebrated Franklin, our countryman, is (as it concerns the happiness of man, speaking diffidently,) perhaps inferior in importance to that of Jenner. The Jennerian discovery, tends to save the lives of millions, the Franklinian of hundreds. But all lovers of natural philosophy, are compeliable to acknowledge, that the identity of the electric fluid, obtained artificially, with that of the clouds, has given a wider scope to human thought, than the recency of the Jennerian discovery, has as yet, afforded. There can be little doubt, that in a succession of years, some gigantic geniuses of the medical profession, will improve and extend

the benefits of the happy disclosure.

low

welt

mon

z the

gave

n the

best.

W us

that

tably

ere in

ne on

aree-

rison.

at pe-

anáill-

v they

of the

ative

o use

were

, and

adroit

g, be-

nt dis-

We.

ourse.

ar ma

ation.

e your

the in-

enner.

ng, its

POWOR

At the Dauphin jail, our notions of escape were strengthened. The prison may be 800 yards from St. John's gate, the interval at that time, was free from buildings. From without the building appeared fermidable. The courts yard, was very contracted for so large a house, and was encompassed by a strong stone wall, at least twenty feet high. The windows and doors. were seemingly, by their bars impenetrable. But what cannot men of true spirit effect, whon made the subjects of oppression. Opposite to the jail, across the street leading to St. John's gate, at a distance of forty yards, there stood a house, which became the station of the guard, who superintended us. In the first of our imprisonment, we were attended by the regular troops, or sailors, who were embodied by government as soldiers, but now, the guard (as our force without had made a firm stand,) was replaced by the militia, who were the most inert and despicable of military men. The sentries were stationed on the outside of the jail,

N

we had no witnesses of our confinct within, except the captain of the proxest, who did not pry with a manicious eye. He was a generous and open-hearted enemy—had no guile himself, nor imputed it to othern. The principal defence on this side of the city, as it regarded our attempt at evation, lay at and near St. John's gate. The guard bere was most usually composed of thirty men, of the regular troops or sailors. They would have given us a hustle, but of a certainty, we should have overnowered them, by the force of numbers, as stout and as able bodied men as themselves, whose courage was not to he questioned, though there was a great difference in the pature of our respective arms. Having examined the jail carefully, its imbecility to restrain us, was apparent. It was an old Prench huilding in the Bastile style. The walls, of stone, and more than three feet thick; were impenetrable by any of our means. Upon examining the bars of the windows, which were ariginally ill-constructed, many were found so much corroded, as to move up and down in the anckets. These could be taken out. The mildness of Governor Carleton's reign, seemed not to require a strict inspection into places of this kind. About this time, a selected council was palled, of which your father had the honor to he one, and wasteriefly composed of the sergeents. The process major Joseph Aston, of Lamb's artificrists, then a sergeant-major, had the presidency. Our discoveries were disclosedthe means of escape considered, and a consultation of the men recommended. This was done, and there was not a dissentient voice. At the stair head, there was a small room, lighted by a small window; the door was locked .- Peop

i or

ot pry

e and nor

nce on

ttempt

The

thirty

They

ertain-

by the

hodied .

not to

differ-

Hay-

pecility

an old

walls.

; were

on ex-

h were

wind to

in the

e mikk

sed pet

of this

tav lis

oner to

serge-

ton, of

or. had

scloped

a con-

ris was

e. At

lighted

-Perp-

ing through the keyhole, large iron hoops were discovered; the spring of the lock, kindly gave way to our efforts, the room was ransacked a and as neatly closed. The room furnished up with a large number of strong iron-hoops, two and three inches broad, and a considerable quantity of other iron, of different shapes and sizes, deposited there as lumber. From the first of these articles, we formed a rough, but weighty species of sword, with a wooden handle, a blow from which, in the hands of one of our stout men, would have brought down one of the stoutest of the enemy. The residue of the iron, was applied to the formation of spear-heads. These were affixed to splits of ar-plank, about ten feet in length, which had formed in part, the bottoms of the lower births. These weapons, it is true, were of the coarsest make, yet in the hands of mon, determined to sacrifice their lives for freedom, they would have had a considerable eway. Our long knives, which many of us accreted when captured, also became spears points. These weapons were concealed under the lower range of births, which were raised a foot from the floor. The planks were neatly raised, the nails were extracted, and the nailhead, with a part of its shank, placed in its former position. Over these lay our blankets. and bundles. It was a standing rule, to have two sentries, constantly on the watch, one an each end of the interior of the jail. Their duty consisted in giving a signal of the approach of the efficers of the garrison, who were in the habit of visiting us daily, as there were shoemakers and taylors among us, who worked cheaper than those of the gity, merely for the purpose of bettering their condition. There

bs

D8

WI

ST

ar

gu

WC

m

th

lai

OU

ed

ter

m

th

th

was policy in this watchfulness. When the signal was given, the inner doors were thrown open, those appointed for the purpose, laid upon the birth which hid our arms, as if in a drowsy state. The officers were accosted with assumed confidence, and much complaisance. The council met daily, cometimes in small squads, and when any thing of much consequence was to be considered, in larger; but at all times secretly, or at least not obviously as a council, from a fear of traitors, or some indiscretion of the young men. Our arrangements. so far as my judgment could discern, were judicious. Aston was to act as general, McCoy. and some others became colonel. Boyd and others of the most spirit, became majors, captains, lieutenants, &c. That which cheered me much, was that the gouncil assigned me, a first lieutenancy under my friend Boyd, whose vigor and courage were unquestionable.

The plan of the escape was thus: Aston who was ar excellent engineer, was to have the particular superintendency of Lamb's company, which to a man was well informed in their duty, active and spirited. These were to be increased to a band of one hundred and afty men, whose duty it was to attack the guard at St. John's gate. The attack of the guard opposite the fail, was assigned to the discretion of Boyda Conningham and myself; the council generously, giving us the authority of a first selection of twenty two persons, from the whole body of our men. The residue of our force, was so disposed of, as to act as a body of reserve to Aston, under the command of McCoy, and another smaller body was reserved to support Boyd, particularly by way of setting fire to the jail, the guardPOWD

laid

f in a with ance. small

onse-

out at

sly as ne innents.

o ju-

I Cov. d and cap-

ed me

A first

vigor

e the

pany, duty.

ensed

whose.

ohn's

e the

Boyd.

POHS-

ion of

of our

posed

un-

smal-

rtiou-

vard-

house, and the buildings in its heighborhood, to amuse or employ the onemy, while we were run ning to St. John's gate Hit was expected we could arrive there, by the time Actou and his party would be victorious. Our particular duty was of the desperate kind, something of the mature of the forious hope. Nothing but the virtue and bravery of cour cohienders would en sure the safety of our lived of for of they should arrive at St. John's gate, had discount the guard; and if then seeking and to by hight, they would leave us to the mercy of all entaged enemy, who would sacrifice us be their fary. But lation. Previously to the littlebervations, beour military plans, you should have been informaed also of the real site of the juit of its the ternal structure, from which the sally was to be made. The Dauphia July is built on a plain pretty much declined towards the street. It follows, that the front of the lower story, that is the selfare, was on a level with the street. The back ground was ten or twelve feet higher! In the cellar, near the foot of the stairway, there was a plenteous fountain of water, which supplied the house. The conduits leading from the spring, by the severity of the weather, were in peded by ice, so that the water, in great dum tity remained in the cellar, which, with the additional earelessness of our people, who east the rinsing of their buckets, on the floor of the apartment, formed a bed of ice a foot thick. and very firm and solid. This cellar had a door newly made, of strong pine plank, five feet in width, which opened inwards the sill was level with the street. The door was bung upon

H. hinger of a darge sizes fixed on the inside, expect to sour wow and operations . But what was still moneyabourds the door, was hasped within, and secured by a large pad-lock of Close majortion/: and thoughtfulness, had made the joyed, perfect masters of those hinges and the look the they would not have stood a second of which was distd fully a foot spainst the door. Even this would have given way to our incontithe whole of our plan was well laid, and thereughly digested. That door was to be our selly port. Hoys, proceeding with our division— Aston and McCoy following, they turning rapidly to the left for St. John's gate. The dislocation of the free batt of the windows, was to ensup all those which could be removed, being knews were to become issues for our bravest ment Every man knew thin station. It is an ald and a trite observation, that it is a difficult thing to describe a battle; so as to give a clear ides of all the enuses and effects of each movement, without overloading and confusing the picters. The same may be said of a conspiracy tuch as ours. Going through the entry from the front door into the jail-yard, near the back door, but still within the prison, there are two casities opposite to each other, strongly walled and arched. We called them the black holes. On the outside of the building, in the yard, those cavities assumed the forms of banks, ten or eleven feet high, and as wide and well sod. dod. With some address and agility, a sprightly man could surpass either of them. The wall above those banks was probably ten feet higher. In the daytime we often climbed up the wall.

by means of its interstices, from which the martar had fallen in the course of time, to take a peop at the city, merely putting our eyes above the level of the top of it.

aside.

what

asped

Close

o the

ad the

end of

door.

d, and

e our

rapid-

isloca-

being

t is an

ifficult

move-

he pic-

piracy

from

e back

re two

holes.

yard,

ks, ten

ll sodrightly

e wall

nigher

wall

to en-

A Mr. Martiny a bardy, daring and active young many of Lamb's company, I think a sergeant, proposed to bear intelligence of our projects, to the American commander, without the walls. His plan was approved. A time for irruption was named, though the day was not particulavised. The signals to invite the advance of our army to St. John's gate, were the burning of the houses, and the firing of the guns of the ramparts towards the city. As yet, we were unprepared to move. This expedition of Martin's was profoundly a secret among those of the councily from a fear that some bungler might attempt the same path, fail, and by his being taken, unveil our plots. Permit me a short episode on the escape of Martin. A It was singularly adventurous, and the neatness of its execution, renders it worthy of remark. I had the please sure of hearing it recounted, in more happy times, at New-York. Martin was dressed in warm elething, with good gloves; a white cap; shirt and overalls were prepared for him. He appeared in the jail-yard among the prisoners. in his daily dress. The time of looking up and calling the roll, generally happened about sundown. It was the business of the captain of the provest who was accompanied by a file of men. The prisoners, instigated by those in the secret, emplayed themselves out of doors, until late in the evening, in play, as if to keep their bodies warm. It was a blowing and dreary evening, which was purposely chosen. At locking up, those in the secret lagged behind, tardily, push-

ing the uninformed before, yet so slowly, as cffeetually to crowd the gangway; Martin remaining in the rear. The operation took place at the clanging of the lock of the great frost door. This measure was imagined and effected on purpose to procure to Martin, a sufficiency of leisure to get to his hiding place, which was no other than a neek, formed by the projection of the door-way, and on the top of one of the banks before spoken of. Here he had time to put on his cap, shirt, &c. The efficer who examined the yard, could not perceive him, unless he went out of the door, several paces to the left, and most probably, not even then, for Martin would be covered in the snow, and imperceptible, Happily the officer went no further than the threshold, and made but a slight survey of the yard. This account, so far, is derived from my own knowledge; what follows, is from Martin himself. "Martin tarried there until seven or eight o'clock. The dilemma he was in, could only be surpassed in imminence of danger, by his extreme activity, skill and courage. There worm four contries stationed around the jailtwo at each corner in front, and the like number at the corners of the yard in the rear. Those sentries, though relieved every quarter of an hour, were soon driven into the sentry-boxes, by the cold and keenness of the whistling winds. If they had passed the spaces allotted them by duty, the escape of Martin must have been impossible. Watching the true time, he slipped down the wall into the deep snow underneath unobserved. Hence, he made a sudden excursion to the left of St. John's gate, at a part of the wall, where he well know no sentry was placed. Leaping the wall, into the snow, he

ain#

e at

oor.

Dur-

lei-

no

n of anka

t ou

went

and

ohld

ibles

the

f the

even

bluos

r, by

here

عليان

hose

fan

s. by

inds.

n by

im-

pped

eath

our's

et of

WBS

be

was unharmed. The soldier fired, as it were, at a pliantom, for when Martin's body came into contact with the snew, it was undiscernible—the desired information was given;" but of this, we could merely make surmises until the May following. That which is very remarkable is, that the absence of Martin was unknown to government, until the explosion of our plot.

Our next solicitude was the acquisition of powder. This article could be obtained but by sheer address and shrewd management. But we had to do with men who were not of the military cast. We began first to enter into familiarity with the sentries, joking with them and pretending to learn French from them. The guard, usually of Canadians, consisted of many old men, and young loys, who were very "coming." A few small gun-carriages were constructed, not more than six inches in length, and mounted with causen, or howitzers, which were made of many folds of paper, and were bound tightly around with thread. These were shown to the sentries from time to time, and a little powder was requested, with which to charge them. Our births formed an angle of the room. The upper births, as well as the lower, had a ledge of several inches in heighth. in which, embrasures were formed with the knife. Two parties were raised in opposition to each other, each of which took possession of one side of the angle. The blaze and report, which was nearly as great and as loud as that of small pistols, created much laughter and merriment. This sport, the child of a seeming folly, served us as a pretence and justification for soliciting powder. The apparent joy prevailing

among us, pleased the Canadians, both old and young, and did not alarm the government. We obtained many eartridges in the course of a few: recks, two-thirds of which came to the hands of Ascon and his corps, for the purpose of manufacturing matches, &c. &c. Fire arms of any kind, could not by any finesse be procured. The commerce of cartridges, accompanied by a suavity and deference of manners, towards our young friends, procured us many quarters of pounds of powder, which they bought secretly out of funds, some of which were procured in a Judicrous way. We had many sick in the hospital, for when any one appeared to be disordered in the least degree, he was hurried to the infirme. y, when cured, he was returned to us. Some of the men, went so far as to feign sickness, to get to that place, where they lived in a more. sumptuous style than that of the jail. The frequent removals caused the propagation of a repost that the prison was unhealthy. Many pieus matrons, came to see us, and never empty handed. Some elderly aune, of respectable families, were of the number, and generally brought money, truly not great in quantity, but not the less acceptable to the sick and convalescent; as these alms procured them some slight comforts, such as tea, &c. These were the religious and humane collections of the sisterhood, and mostly consisted of the smallest change. There was a beautiful countenanced youth, Thomas Gibson, first sergeant of Hendricks, who had studied physic at Carlisle, Pennsylvania, allied to me by affinity, who had, probably from a knowlege he had of his profession, austained his health hithesto; his cheeks were blooming as roses. He was one of the council. As young mon, we car200

We

few:

da of

anu-

BOY

The

URYÍ

oung

ds of

t of

ludi

pitaly

d in

rma-

Some

58. to

more .

e fre-

B TC-

y pie

mpty

fami-

pught

t the

it; no

forts.

s and

iostly

Was n

bson.

ndied

ne by

ge pe

hith

Ho

ad little about the means, so that we obtained the end, which was powder. We lived above stairs, and never shared in the gratuities of the ladies, which were rapacionally awaited at the entrance of the prison. Gibson and myself, were standing at a window near the great door, and apposite to McCoy's room, a neat little box which had been knocked up for his purposes. Looking into the street, a lady with a thick weil, was observed to take the path through the mow to our habitation. "Zounds Gibson, there's a nun." was scarcely expressed, before he was hurried into McCoy's apartment and put to bed; though dressed. Severals of us waited respectfully at the dear, till the officer of the guard unlocked it. The nun entered she seemed, from her manners, to be genteel and respectable. We were most sedulous in our attentions to the lady, and so prevailed, as to induce her to come into McCoy's room. Here lay Gibson, severed to the chin with the bed-clothes, nothing exposed but his beautiful heir and red cheeks, the latter indicating a high fever. It was well the lady was no physician. The nun crossing herself and whispering a pater-nester, povred the contents of her little purse into the hand of the patient; which he held gently, without the binniet ing, and left us. What should the denation be, but twenty-four coppers, equal at that time to two shillings of our money. The latter eineum stance added much to the humor, and extreme merriment of the transaction. This money was solely appropriated for powder. Thus, careless of every thing but the means of escaping, we can joyed many merry, and even happy hours, Arion, who was provident of time, by the middle of March, (I have no note of the precise period) had all his matters of arrangement in good order.

ha The council assigned a day for the irrupa tion. As we dared not touch the door in the cellar, from a fear of discovery by inspection. (and it was examined almost daily,) it was determined to postpone the unlossing the hinges and lock, which were under our command, until the moment of escape. It became a main question, how to remove the ice at the foot of the door. Here lay the great difficulty, as it was universally agreed that the door must be dragged down suddenly, so that we might march over it. Remember also, that a sentry was posted not more than, from fifteen to twenty feet from the outside of the door. Many pronositions were made in council, how to effect the removal of the body of ice without exposure to detection. One was lightly to pick it away with hatchets, a few of which, had been secretly retained, by the prisoners, and brought into the jail. To this, there were several insuperable objections: the softest stroke of the lightest tomahaek, upon the ice, would be heard by a sentry so near: or an unlucky stroke might touch the door, which would resound and inevitably cause a discovery. Others proposed to wear away the ice by boiling water; two most obvious objections lay here: the steam would search for a vent through the crevices of the door, and window, and develop our measures; besides the extreme cold would have congreated the hot water, the moment it fell, so as to add to our difficulties. Another idea was suggested. that was "with knives to cut the door across on the surface of the ice," to this plan there was a fatal exception, the ice had risen on the lower cross-piece of the door, nearly an inch. so that we must cut through the cross-piece

the tion, denges

main ot of

WAS

rag-

arch

enty

pro-

effect

sure

eway

into

iper-

ght-

night ine-

most

rould

f. the

res ;

ealcd

o add

ėross

ther**e** n the

inch

piece

dengthwise, and through the thick plank or to wise. Though this labour might have been accomplished by industry and persuverance, yet the time it would necessarily take, would cause a discovery by the scarchers. The last and out to method to avoid discovery, was adopted. This was to embody history of eighteen of the most the should, two und two relieve such other, and with our long bulves gently pure away the feet next the all of the door, so an to make a greater with, and deep us the sill. The persons word vamed and appointed to this service. Now the capable lity of the execution of our plot, influed comfort and joy late all hearts Il was intended immediately after locking up, on the night of the trouption, that these prudent men, should dessend show the waste by pairst and by incobanit boar, have the world finished by three o'clock In the morning, when the sally sliculd be made. We had sarefully noticed from the walls of the fail, and the cate of the house, where there is a trap-door, the pracing of the guards, the humaberrund stationing of the scatties. We wore safe, therefore, in the moustres we had taken, for the attack of the guard of St. John's gate. Our wn guard was perfectly scrulinized. The op portunities, were of the most contactions win The guard house, was directly in our front, where we sould see and be seen Their wifinight through we, the better to observe them, kept mone. This latter circumstance, enabled distinctly to see, that the arms with fixed bayonets, were placed in the right hand corner of the room, as we would enter from the stair-

O

head, and that the greatd towards morning, to a man, were lying asleep on the fleer. The sen-tries, as they were relieved, did the like. This guard, as was before said, in ordinary, consisted of thirty persons. Boyd's party from a perfoot knowledge of their method of conducting, esteemed it no great hardiness, to undertake the overwhelming them. Subsequently our dan-ger must appear. The nights were piercingly sold—the sentries soon housed themselves in their bexes. As the sally, to succeed, wast be most silent and quick, it was hoped to quiet all of them, before any alarm could apread. Besides, Boyd's divison (the first rank of which, were to despatch the nearest sentry by the spear, others of the succeeding corps, were assigned to assail the rest of the sentries, immediately around the prison. The getting up the stairs of our guard-house, so quickly as to create no alarm, was not only feasible, but in my mind, (with the force delegated to us,) of absolute certainty of success. The front door was always open by night and by day, we knew the precise number of steps, the stairs contained. An agile man, would mount at three strides. A light was continually in the passage. Entering the room, and turning to the right, the arms in the corner were ours. The bayonet, from necessity, would become the lot of the guard. In this part of the enterprise, profound silence was all important; the section was to rely on the spear and tomahack. Aston on the other hand, being victomous at St. John's gate, was instantly to turn the cannon upon the city: his fuses, portfire, &c. were prepared and ready as substitutes for those of the enemy, if they were extinguished or taken from the guns. It was

10.8

sen-

This

maist-

Der-

eting

rtake

r dan-

singly

res in ust be set all

Bewhich, pear,) signed

stairs

ate no

vas al-

w the

trides. Enter-

t, the

guard. ilence

ely on other

, Was

ady as

were:

It was

known to us, that all the cannon of the ramparts were charged and primed, and boxes of ammunition and piles of balls in the vicinity of each gun, it was calculated, that the execution of the business of our section, might be effected in at least afteen minutes, together with the fring of the houses. Then running to support Asten, and if he was victorious, to maintain our position on the walls, under a hope of the strival of the American army from without. In that event, St. John's gate, as a first measure, was to be oposed. But if Aston should unfortunately be beaten, (which was most improbable,) then we were to fiv in all directions, and make the adventurous leap. It was supposed that in the latter case, the hurry and bustle created by so sudden, unforescen and daring an attack, would throw the garrison into consternation and disorder, to so great a degree, as to admit the escape of many. Sluggards might expect to be massaored.

The particularity of the foregoing details, are purposely made to impress on your minds, a single truth: "That the best imagined schemes and thoroughly digested designs, whether in military or civil life, may be defeated by a thoughtless boy, the interference of an idiot or a treacherous knave." Two lads from Connection or Massachusetts, whose names are new lost to my memory, prisoners with us, but who had so manner of connection or intercourse with the chiefs, nor knew the minute, yet estantial parts of the measures of the council; but probably having overheard a whisper of the time and manner of the evasion: Those young men without consultation, without authority from their superiors, in the thoughtless arter of

epe

out

the

troi

den

201

ed.

60

di

Th

the

ibl

a Cu inf

for

WE

63

no

00

m

81

gi

th

their minds may the eve of the cally, descended into the collars and with hatchers, picked a be ice at the door will. The operation was board The sentry threatened to fire. The guard was instantly planmed and insmediately denbled, and all our long laboured schemes and well digested plans, annihilated in a municiple Kon comes. rm an adequate idea of the pange to endured My heart was nearly bruken by the exacts of surprize and burning anger, to be thus fathifa outly deprived of the gladdening hope of a spec-dy return to one friends and country. It becames us, however, to put the best face spon it. It was suddenly resolved by the chiefs, to kill the person who should disclose the general plots and to wait upon the officers on the tensuin morning, with our negal attention. When more ing came, it found as afoot. About junrise, the formidable inquisition took place. Major Murray, captain Prentic, the officer of the guard, and a dozen musicoteors cappe, we awaited their approach undismayed. They accosted us very coolly. The cellur was visited, and the work of those fools was apparent. Re-ascending, we could assure the gentlemen, that this effort to escape, was without the knowledge of any of up. This to beaute, was said in the josuitical styles but those who made the assertion, did not then know either the persons or the names of the skly adventagers. The officers and the guard were departing, fully persuaded that it was no more than the attempt of one or two persons to escape. Major Morray was the last to reacte. An Englishman of whom we know not that he was a deserter from our enemies at Roston, had posted himself alose to the right jound of the door, which was more then half ded

SIN

etail

ped-

STILL

Je Ja

the

pot

ning

d us

the

ling.

fort

P of

tical

did

the

atdi

AWO

now

a dit

speared for the passage of the major. There of us who were determinded to execute our fast night's resolution, armed with our long knives; had formed a half-circle around the door, with out observing the intrusion and presence of the deserter. Major Murry was standing on the threshold, speaking in a kindly manner to un when the villian sprung past the major, even jestling him. The spring he made, was so sad den and so entirely unsuspected. that he serech! ed himself from our just vengennée. Touching mai. Marray's shoulder, "Sir," says he "I have something to disclose." The guards oncompassion ed the traiter, and hurried him away to the Governor's palace. We instantaneously percelyed the extent and consequences of this disaster. The prisoners immediately destroyed such of the arms, as were too bulky to hide, if destruct ible, and secreted the rost. In as hour or two. a file of men with an officery demanded Boyd. Cunningham and others, represented by the vile informer, as lukewarm in the plot. They were escorted to the Governor's council. Here they found, that the wretch had evidenced all our proceedings minutely, naming every one who was preminent. Our worthy compatriots were examined on oath, and as mon of honor could not conecal the truth. The questions of the council, (furnished by the informer,) did not admit of equivocation or evasion, if the examinants had been as inclined, and besides all tergiversation, when the outling was marked, was nugatory. They boldly admitted and justified: the attempt. We did not face the worse in our provisions per in the estimation of our enemy. Returning to the jail, my dear Boyd shed the tears of exeruciating anguish in my bosom; da-

0.2

tion

hai

the

the

14

for

III. Eir

sei

of

to:

th

th

ploning our adverse fate. Wa had vowed to each other to be free and do be to thus foolishly baulked, caused the most heart rend-ing griet. Towards two p'clock P. M. we seen several heavy cart-loads, consisting of long and weighty irons; such as hillsoon foot-hobbles and hand-suffe, arrive. The princeers were or dered to their rooms. The ironing begun helow stairs with Mougan's company Here the hilbers were expended. If not much mistaken, ton or twelve person were secured, each inches in diameter. The heavy belts were excame to any range of rooms, they turned to the left, instead of coming to the right where we were. By the time the officers came to us, even the hand cuffs were nearly out. Each of us was obliged to take to his birth, which contained five men each. When they had shackled those of the lower births, they commenced at one the most distant from ours. Blipping in the rear of my companions, best down is apparent trepidation, the black-smith ironed my messmates, and then called to me to descend and submit to his office. Coming Wever mind that lad," said my fejond captain Prentis. They had but three or four pair of head-suffs left, which were clupped on the elderly and robust. Besides McCoy, our Besiface the cook, Doctor Gibson, two others and myself, who were unhampered, all the rest were, in appearance, tightly and famly secured. Though M.Coy. and Boniface, were adente at insurrection, yet their services were of too much importance to government, to be dispensed with. The others of the unfettered, remained so from the exhaus三世 日子 多 1 是 五世 多 方 丁子

waj:

Die

the

ent

2004

baa

ind

hey

eft.

ust.

06-

ore

ce,

OY

yet

to

OFE

tion of the shackles. In new rection of heterest. ing cocurrences, mingled with much for an sportive humos new boursed) which was see cooled by a berief of herrible anguish. The doors were ensuely sleed, before we began to assay the analogaling. These who had small hands, by compressing the palms, could easily divest the irons from their writte Of their there were many, who became the assistants of their friends whose hands were larger. Hero there was a necessity for ingenuity. In Knive notched as www. were the principal means The head of the rivet at the end of the barwas sawed off it was lengthened and a serew formed upon it, so cap which, a false head was made, either of iron or of lead, resembling as much as possible the true head. Again new zivets were formed, from the iron we had proserved in our secret heards, from the vigilance of the searchers. These new rivers being made to bear a strong likeness to the old, were then out into two parts one part was driven into the bolt tightly, became stationary, the other part was moveable. It behaved the wearer of the managle to look to it, that he did not lose the loose part, and when the searchers came to examine, that it should stand firm in the orifice. Some poor fellows, perhaps from a defect of ingenuity, the hardress of the iron, of the want of the requisite tools, could not discharge the bilboes. This was particularly the melunaboly predicament of three of Morgan's men, whose heels were too long to slip through the from which encompassed the small of the lens It was trucky painful, stolesee three persons attacked to a monetrous bur, the weight of which was above their strength to carry. It added to the poights can have sufferinge, in such frigid teether, that their callingues at the bar, having charten lies; sould withdraw the fost and parambulate, the jail; where their companions left them, there they must remain ecated on the final pulies some kind hands assisted them to remove

hgy Ami

tion

WE

the

Lo

hø

ipe

TO

13

60

Them was a droll dog from the eastward, who was sloubly unfortunates in the attack of the city, he had received a spent hall in the pit of the stomach, which had nearly ended him a now it become his las to have an immense foot belt fastened to his log, without a companion to bear him company, and obeer his lenely hours. This victim of persecution and worre we would some times como among us in the ward, bearing an his belt, slung by a cord hitched over his shoul dor. Nothing could damp his spirits. He talkbesides these were similarly situated. Those who were so luckky as to have light hand ouffe. hore them about with them. The greatest daner of discovery arose from those who could free themselves from the beary irone. The anal visitations were increased from twice to their a day, in the first and last the smith searched the balts of each person. But there were other intrusions, intermediately, by offcom evidently despatched by the suspicions of everyment, for the purpose of discovery. To edunterust these new measures of caution and isolousy, we were well prepared. Sentries, on port were regularly stationed at certain windows of the jail, to desery the approach of any one in the garb of an officer. The view from these windows, was pretty extensive, down two of the streets, particularly that leading to the

points. Not yet the ching of the flock of the great door, was upon notice or chieflook of the great door, was upon notice or considered the way warning given we afthe improbiling danguis. The scample chings of the or chings which was trady distorting, and having the two stopped disnorters; gave be much an uncoment. The planking of the followed, and the shribble of the condition of the condition of the souls in Tantarary even this with spart. Happing by our next discount the good discount, and the good discount, and he good discount, and he good discount, and he good discount, and he good discount.

of Day

olt

ar dis

1

1k-

Fa.

in-

be

ith

m-

of

Fo

nd

on

of.

unith, (or worthy liminimal) of a fiveling dream,)
pright ho milled such, and he sus citent.
Towards the middle of April, the wonry,
which we had been imbiling during the winter, now made its appearance in its most visulent violent dianthoon. Many of these who were hat affected were taken to the bespital. But the disease sten-bedaute general musing us. We were attended several times by decide Maybill the physicianticontrol who, by his touter after tions, and amiddle managers, was our affeitions: he proof meethed is cleaning of thousand he poencusines and mild catherately schellened harb, together with fulreprovious *This were young rective; and admillion of the dector! inlutary addice, kept a feet, and practical stray centuary, thuse who were captucky laduleur, and adhered to their blanketts because objects of reals commiseration—Allois Builte and timoted in a man blother appeared on their bodher and dimbin aray - the texts location, and in stranglinstals

the

of of Th

ren

of eat

Vol

ève

ma

Se.

get

.Va

the

or

· th

be

th

cos tell out ... Our minus were now feally deour spirite he the greatest misfortunes, gave way to waitings, growings and death. I know, from disc experience, that when the body suffers pain, disc unind, for the three, butteprived of all his exbilitations in thert, almost of the power of thinking: The ciber joints, the hips, the knees and medicarrety most severely pained. It was ed us almost dully, and very carefully,) there was little or no mitightion of our discuser, except that the distribut, which was livived from unclient cause than that which produced the searcy, was someware buted and that our somety lay clocwhere in the materia medica, which was beyond the group of the physician. The diarrheen came from the navare of the water we used daily. In the month of April, the snows begin to melt not by the heat of the sun, but most probably by the warmth of the earth beneath the thows. The ground; inturated with the sabwwater, as turney increased the fountain-head in the ecline.
Literally, we drank the melicit show. The
source had modicit origin. The diet—suit pork,
inflamous biscuit—damp, and close confinement in marries space; together with the severity of the climate, were the true cates of the scurvy, There was no doubt in any reflective mind among us, but that the virtuous and beneficent Carloton, taking into view the perilogs predica-

man and a good Circulting could,

An observation may be made in this place
with propriety, that is, that in the climates of all
high southern or northern regions, the will is
yer, sich and prolife. This bineficial opera-

100

183

om in

ex.

of

666

OTE

lay

beœn ily.

eft

W.

Ha.

Phe

rk.

316

y of

int

ent

CB-

.est

800

i is

tion of nature, is, in all likelihood attributable to the nitrous qualities which the snew deposites Of the fact, that nitre in the principal ingreent which causes fertility in the earth, no ma of observation, can at this day, reasonably doubt The warth is replete of it. Wherever earth an shade unite, it is engendered and becomes appr rent. This idea is proved by the sircumstant that nitre may be proqueed from cares, the carth of cellars, outhouses, and even from common earth, if kept under cover. During the late revolution, when pewder was so necessary, we every where experienced the good affects of this minerological discovery; it gives me pleasure to say, that it is most fairly secribable to our German ancestors. The snows which usually full in Canada about the middle of November, and generally cover the ground until the end of April, in my crinion, all the soil with them vogetative salts, which forward the growth of This idea was evinced to me, by my vague and inconsiderate mind, from observations then made, and which were more firmly established by assurances from captain Prentis, that muck or masure, which we employ in southern climates, is there never used. In that country, the memont the ground is freed from snew, the grace and every species of plant, spring forward in the most luxuriant manner. Captain Prentis, besides the continuation of his care and friend ship to Gibson and myself, did not restrain his generosity to individuals, but procured for us a permission from government, to send out an old Irishman, of the New-York line, an excellent cothalies to collect for us vegetable food. The first specimen of this good old man's attention and industry, was the production of a large bas-

what to m neck an d

not to the body

Our fried

of the

bitte

an s

ter"

ven

dest

plac

exc

tro

bee

of i

and est bri

tin

destinate of the confidency binocycles of our country which is present the country of the busicot, if we happy at a complete to come must be busicot, if we happy at a complete to come must be busicot, and considered by all of as for exceeded, and received considered by all of as for exceeded, and received considered by all of as for exceeded, and received considered by all of as for exceeded, and of section to be included abways consureing in these bereible dispuses the abusery wature seems to be invitable dispuses the abusery wature seems to be invitable dispuses the abusery between the attention to be business, both only specific, with a dre attention to be business, both or other are the city specific, with a dre attention to be business, both or other are the straines of the dispuse. Protection in contracted knowledge, drive improved the they there is any contracted knowledge, drive improved between the conhe and material discrepancy; between the con-hearry and the fund learry of liigh southern and northern littledes. The descriptions given by Rebins, (or if you please the Rep. Mr. Walter,) tend other veyagors of the etimes, the symp our in every purisaint with one various exper-ciones at Quebec. Becollect it is not a physithe other speakers above spoken of governor

Carleton directed that we should be supplied with fresh deep. This was no other than that which had been brought into the city when we have the Tremble, in the foregoing autumi, and in aid of the stores of the garrison. It had dain in a frezen state daving the winters without esting, but new as warn weather was approaching, it begins to them and was liberally disposed or to the and prisoners. The boof was event, though their and there a little blacish, like

Many Man the production and any tributed for

the mould of stale bread, very tender, but son what mawkish. It was palatable and nutritive to men afflicted us we were. This beef, coult? nected with vegetables, soon animated as with an idea of returning health and vigor e yet though it mitigated the pains we endured, it did

FIIOT

died

that

ı med.

OSPE

not totally expel the sources and a mile of the seventh of May arrived. Two ships onme to the nid of the garrison, besting through a body of ice, which perhaps was impervious to any other than the intropid sallor. This relief of men and stores, created great joy in the town. Our army began their disorderly retreat. My friend Simpson, with his party, were much misused, from a neglect of giving him information of the intended Hight of our army. Some few of the men under his authority, straggled and were taken in the retreat. They came to inhabit our house. Now, for the first time, we heard an account of the occurrences during the winter's blockade, which to us, though of trivial import, were immensely interesting. The saily of this day, produced to the prisoners addition comfort. Though the troups took a severe reyonge upon our friends without, by burning and destroying their properties The west day. more ships and troops arrived a pursuit took place, the effect of which was of no consequence. except so far as it tended to expel the volonial troops from Canada. To the prisoners, this retreat had pleasing consequences; fresh bread; beef newly slaughtered, and a superabundance of vegetables, was a salutary diet to our reduced and scorbutic bodies. Still freedom, that great est of blessings, and exercise were required to bring back to us genuine healthe About this time an incident occurred, which threw us into Dos Note Mark atom sed

detacy), an it relieved dur whitely and faculties from a ment tertaring piece of preservative duty: device the selection of ment, of the intensity One days per haps the fife thenth or eighteenth of Muy, selench Madican, attended by major Carleton, a younger brother of the general's, major Maibaum, we Gorman officer, both of whom bud just arrived from Eu-nope, together with captain Prantis, and other officers, entered the just about mid-days. The prisoners, paraded in the jail-pard completely ironeth. Captain Prontice by the direction of cocel Maclean, pointed out to the other efficars; This is general such a calculate is colonel such a one, and in this manner proceeded to came all the leading characters. Hoppening to he very near the uniable, it might be said, ad-mitable major Carleton, he was everticard to my f colonel, ambition is landable, cannot the irgue of these mon-bestruck off? This the cos lough andered to be done immediately. Our blad hourted bineksmith wan not distant is her lames, and the officers remained to sea some of the langest holts divested; and their left use Siscepts come, gentlemon, said the blacksmithy The pile lay before him. Being now at full be dily liberty, we completed a ball court, which on originally: formed, as if were, by steakth. Here a singular phenomenon which attends the stury, discovered itself. The venerable and respectable Maybin, had recommended to un exercise; not only as a mean of cure, but as a preventive of the teerbutic humours open rating. Four of the most active would engage at a game of "fisca." Having played same CH IN PROPERTY BUTTON OF SCHOOL OF WILL

to

th

or na o o h

[.] See Note XIII.

tyrk each

Dat.

her The

toly

ord :

onel to

g te

ad

de to

3: 60×

· hen

10 05

1065

nithy

the

bo-

· by

hieh

eno

bus

BARO

were descontituation, of a party becaution at down, to was select by the most viole sine in the hips and knees, which incorneitated him from pluy for many hours, and from vising from the earth, where the patient had seated dimeelf. These pains taught us to keep aford all days and even to out our food in an erect post ture. Saing to bod in the evening, after a hand lay's play, these rensuliens of pain upon daying lown, immediately attacked no. The pain would continue half in hour, and often longer. My were the the morning, we rose free from paint and the routine of play and fatigue ensued, but always attended by the same effects, particularly to the stabborn and insantions, who would not adhere to the wholssome advice of doctor Maybin. Those who were inactive, retained those exeruciating pains to the last, together with their distorted, tdusted, and blackened limbs. Upon our return from Canada, in the autumn of 1776; I saw five or six of my crippled compatitions, habbling through the streets of Lancaster up their way home. It cost a tear-all that could be given. By the month of August, the active were relieved from those pains.

Towards the end of May, governor Carleton ordered each of the prisoners a linuar chirt. This gift, to me, was most agreeable, as linuar next the akin, for some mouths past, was unfelt, and few persons who have not felt the extremity of such endurances as ours, can form a full conception of the gratification we enjoyed. Having had but one shirt on at the time of our capture, it was soon destroyed by the wearing, and the repeated washings it required. Delicacy for-hids a dilution upon the cause and effects. You would laugh at the description of one of our

ful

ter

Wh

ko

CO

rac line

jos

Ser.

tol

104

80

tre 'Di

bk

winking pattice. Althing oaely, the prime object trante make a strong lay of wood-ashes, of which to had pleaty/datowhich the lingua was plung-od, and concepted for an hunr or more, under a hope of putting an end to certain vagrants, of a resiera with which smoot of us are abquistated! During the builings the votaries of blenglisessy blocked in a hierket, or blacket cont, watched the challitions of the kettle. The boiling done, me washed his own, and watched it during the drying, almosthin avestato of natures Captain Prentis, pitying my and condition, pressed upon me often to accept from him, money to purchase a suit of clothes, and he would trust to the begin or and integrity of my father for payment, whose character he knew. Adhering to my first determination, this polite and generous proposal of my amiable and deserving friend, was as often, yet most thankfully declined, maugre the advice of my bosom friends Boyd and Cunning. ham to the contrary. . He however fereed upon . me a half johannes. This small oum was applied to the soluce of my heart. In the first place, to an article still more necessary than a shirt. The residue was expended upon matters which cheered the hearts of my messmates, whom I dearly loved; cheese, sugar, tea, coffee, &c. spirits was detested, as we knew it to be a poison to scorbutic persons What pleased me much more, and gave me pure delight, was the following occurrence: Of my own accord, no one knowing of the intention, the good old Irish. man was delegated to purchase three or four pounds of tobaccount was secretly brought. and as secretly borne to our room. A pound was produced and fairly parted among our to-

e in Tourse to be a construction of the construction

hacco-chowers a Tou cannot conscive their joy: When the first peroxiem was ever, the remainder was dispessed of in the same way. The thanks fulness of these brave, but destitute men, arosa; towards may mearly to adoration. You will ask why? Hear the reasons. From your small, knowlege of mankind, you can have little comception of the force habit has on the human race. One who shows smokes or snuff tobacco, is as little able to abstain from that enjoymont, as you would be, if sampelled, to refrain from your usual meals. This papticular in spoken of, to poresade you by no maan to use tobacco in any shape. It is a paison, of the most inveterate kind, which like opium, arrenic, and several ether medicaments, may be applied to healthful purposes, yet, if employed in an extremo degree, preduces instantaneous death. These kless are not visionary, but are supportsble by the authority of some of the best physicians. You are at full liberty to put your ownreturn to my follow-prisoners the season of the season

out the milderness, where the army seen runout the naticle of tobacco, the men had many valuable succedencems. The backs of the different kinds of firs, the cedar, the red willow, and and the leaves of many satringent or hitter plants supplied the plants by within the hare walls of our juil, there was no substitute for this dearand inebriating vegetable. Thus was all my money expended, and much to my satisfaction, and to the heart felt pleasure of my brave and worthy companions, whose sufferings, in certain points, were greater than my own. The table

esal

1000

the

ng. pon pli-

tee.

int

rich

n' I

gror.

noi-

the:

sha

OUT

ht. md

to-

a we know the Manager of the

^{*} See Note XIV.

of the virtuous and generous Frontis; had often furnished me discretly with wholesome viands. With convalences; though pennyless, we again became mercy and lighthearted.

the

an

end

the

GD.

in

U

mi

in

in

se lic

TU

In the beginning of August, we were told by captain Pronting that the Governor hud concludaed, to send us by sea to New York upon parole, for the purpose of being exchanged; that the transports, which had brought the late reluforcements from Europe, were cleansing and preparing for the voyage. Now there was crultation. On the seventh of Augusty we subscribed out written parolum Baptain Prentis produced me permission from governments with a few friends, to traverse the city. An officer of the garrison attended as Our first desire was, to see the grave of our General, and those of his aides; as well as those of the beloved Hendricks and Humphreys. The graves were within a small place of interment, weath walled with stone. The coffins of Montgomery, Cheeseman and M Phorson, were well arranged, side by side. Those of Hendricks, Humphreys, Coopor, ker were arranged on the south side of the inclosure, but as the burials of these heroes, took place in a dreary winter, and the earth impenetrable, there was but little poil on the coffee, the snow and ice, which had been the principal covering, being now dissolved, the foot of the General's conin, was exposed to the air and view. The coffin was well formed of fire plack. Captain Prentis assured me, that the graves should be deepened, and the bodies duly deposited; for he also knew Montgomery as a fellow-soldier, and lamonted his untimely fate.

See Note XV.

Thence we proceeded past the aitadely along the ramparts to Cape Diamond, descended the declivity slantingly, and examined the stockade and block-house. It is this little tour, which enabled me to describe to you, the site and defences of that formidable pass. Proceeding thence through a part of the Lower-town we came to a narrow street which led us to an immense stair-way, one of the ascents into the Upper-town. Ascending here, we came to the main passage, which curvatured down the hill into the Lower-town, and which was to lend in in our supposed attack upon the Epper-town: this we pursued, and came to the place of the second barrier, which had been lately demolished. The houses on both sides of the street. in which we had taken our stands were now in ruines having been burnt by the garrison, as were the suburbs of St. Roque and St. John's This was done to render them unfit for the sheltor of future assailants. Thus It is, that was destroys the wealth, and robs the individual of happiness. We had no time to make observations, but such as could be done in passing has tily. Returning to the Upper-town, by the print cipal and winding road, we were strongly impressed with the opinion, that if our whole force, as was intended, had formed a junction in the Lower-town, that it was utterly impracticable, either from our numbers or our means, to mount by a road such as this was. Suppose it not to have been barricaded and enfiladed by cannon, it must be assailed by the bayenet, of which weapon, we had very few, and the enemy was fully supplied. But when we reflect, that across the road, at the centre of the arc of each curve, there was a barricade, and cannon places

BILL

th

er

re

150

et

re

od

b#--

de

7)

he

86.'

st br

ho

tie

ot

1

he

dy

1.1

te.

taranke the intervals between the different barrierdes, the difficulties of the assent, which in very steep, would be increased oven to insurmountability. The road is very narrow and lined. next the hill, by a stupendous precipies: en the other hands there were some housen remantically perched on the side of the declivity. and tome rocks. The declivity of itself was an excellent defence, if the besieved sould maintain the position in front, for in a short time, in so confined a space, the assailants must either die retreate or be thrown down the hill from the road. But suppose all these defences overcome, and we had arrived at the brow of the hill at the entrance of the Upper-town, here ustill more formidable obstacle presented itself, than those which could be formed by art in the lower parts of the road. At this place there is a hole low-way, which in the hurry we were in, and the slight view we dared take, appeared an if cut out of the solid rock of a depth of thirty or forty feet. Athwart this way, there was a strong stockade of a height nearly equal with the perpendicular sides of the way or gulley. From the surface above, we might have been stoned to death, by the defenders of the fortress, without a probability of their receiving harm. from us below, though ever so well armed. But the stockade itself, from its structure and abundant strongth, would have resisted a force manifold our numbers, and much better supplied and accoutred. From these observations, (those of an uninstructed youth to be sure,) there was no hesitation in telling my intimate friends, then. and since that the scheme of the conquest of the Upper-town, was visionary and groundless ;: of the result of our dear general's reflections,,

an

ex

of

hateforced upon him by the nature and necessit ties of the times, and his disagreeable predicament, If a coalition of our torces in the Lower town had taken effect, the general would then! must probably; shave developed his latent and lane. The reasons given in equacily may have been promulgated, merely to induce a more spirited exertion upon the part of the officers and soldiery, who were not in the secrety to excite a factitious valor. Getting Into actions action; and warmed by the opposition of the enemy, the troops might have been induced to persevere, in any apparently sudden design of the general. The eupidity of the soldiers had been played upon. This latter fact, is known to me of my own particular knowledge. Some weeks before the attack, the soldiers in their common conversations, spoke of the conquest of the city as a certainty; and exultingly of the plunder, they should win by their bravery! It was not my business to contradict : but to urge them on. Perhaps the setting fire to the Lower-town, on the side of Cape Diamond; considering the prevailing wind, which was at south-east, but afterwards changed to north and north-west; such a design might have been effected. The shipping also ice-bound, numberous and valuable, moored around the point? would have been consumable: All this destruct tion would have been a victory of no mean kind: but adding celat to the known gallantry and prowess of the general. The Almighty willed, that we should never know the pith or marrow of his projects; whatever they were, my mind is assured that they were considerately and well designed. He was not a man to act incautious. ly and without motive, and too honest and brave

で 日本の 中国 では 日本

DE.

if

h

III.

Sign

He.

1-

d

0

18.

D.

£

.

to adoption sinister warts allies doubt we sould have escaped by the way of St. Ropus, protects ed by the emoke of the ponfingration, undithe tenver and bustle, which would consequently be brighted in the town. Though this past is too parrow for the operation of a large bi en in an extended front, still me should have peritos pumerous fundos tim sincumatanos upposed.) for the enemy to afford, a ferentianua ing from Pulace gate, adequate to oppose us. In the next instance, if we should happen to be to more fartunate, in such a retreat as turbet the face, they must entreat into the city, by the way of Palace gute, and we should have intencil poll-moll, and should thus have achieve ed the possession of that important place the Upper-town, which was the primary hiew, and hat hope of the general and the army. Those were the coude notions of a yearth, formed upon the apat, but in a maturation of thirty years, one still retained at the state of the state of the

th

VI

W

of a

pir ta va of

The general did not want for information. Many persons, male and female, (unnecessary months,) were expelled the city, to wander for subsistence, among their friends in the country, His own knowledge of Quebec, where he had served, would enable him by interrogation, to extert from those emigrants a full stock of information of all the new defences erected by Governer Carleton since. Consequently, knowing the practicability of Cape Diamond, (Annee de mere, which must be provincial, and I do not understand,) as an entrance to the Lower-town, (But a most dangerous une,) and that of St. Rogue, with which and its barriers, he was particularly acquainted, from his own, and the observations of others; if so, he would most

wredly be informed of the defensive obstract tions on the slope of the hill; and the enclose ment of the troops, which would in consequence stend: and he would also know that this place to the garrison, would be a perfect Thermonyland passable by ten times our numbers if we had heen veterang and were better furnished. Ere these reasons, there was an inducement for my mindo at all times since the attacks to conclude that it was never general Montgomery's real design, to conquer the Uppper town, by an invacion from the Lower-town, but his hidden and true plan was, by a consolidation of our whale force, to burn the Lower-town, and the shipping, and to retreat by the way of Palaces rate and St. Reque. If a sally was made at Palaco gate, the event, as was observed before; might be fatal to the enemy. The compachene sive mind of Montgomery, would not only approciate to the full extent, the peculiar advantages of the enemy, but estimate to its frue value the means he possessed, and the merits of his own army. Presuming the colonists to e successful in the Lower-town, where there was much wealth, and the avarieious among us be in some degree gratified, it would have created a spirit of hope and enterprise in the men, tends ing to induce them to remain with us. Afters wards, combining our whole force, with the res inforcements we had a prospect of receiving an attack upon the Upper-town might have such ceeded. In a word the destruction of the Lowers town, in my apprehension, should be considered merely, as preparatory to a general assailment of the Upper-town, notwithstanding all that has been said in the memoirs of those days. A contrary opinion went abroad "that the general,

10

Da.

ak

0

le

ot

t.

LS.

18

if he had fived, by this assault would have conquered Quebec." No idea could be more fala cious. It was politically right, to keep up that opinion, among the people in those trying times; but its accomplishment with our accompaniment of men and defective arms, was ideal. Our walk from the great gate and palisade, was conviderable, ere we reached our detestable dwelling: as we had enjoyed a few hours of feeting liberty, the "locking-up," became the more horrible to our feelings. The next day, however, we had the ineffable pleasure, of march ing in a body to the water side, and embarked board five transports. On the following day, new joy was in store for me. General Wiliam Thompson, (of whom it might well be said, this is a man,") who had commanded our resiment, at Prospect-hill, as its colonel: he had been taken prisoner at the Three-rivers, with several other officers, in the preceding month of June. He was now aboard of our little fleets destined to New-York. Thompson came to our ship, to visit the miserable remnant of a part of his gallant corps. The general had a special message to me, from my father, with whom he vas intimate. Coming through Laneaster in his way, to his command in Canada, he was authorized by my father, if he saw me in that country, to furnish me with money. The good man profered me four half-johannes', one only was accepted. What was nearer and dearer to heart, was the information, that my parents, relatives and friends were well. That money was applied to the use of my messmates, in the way of sea stores. Permission being obtained. Boyd and myself, went ushere: our parchases comisted of a very large Cheshire cheese, coffee,

tea and sugar, together with a large roll of tobacco for the mon. Again pennyless, jollie

ty and mirth did not forsake us.

hat

100

ent

Dur

OH-

rell1

ting

oris

OW-

reh-

-ked

Wil:

said.

r ro-

had

with

onth

flooti our

purt

ecial

m he

er in

WAS

that

good

only

rents.

money

in the

ained,

chases coffee.

We sailed on the tenth of August, cunvoyed by the Pearl frigate, captain M. Kenzie. Passing the delightful island of Orteans, much in shore, we observed the farmers reaping their wheat, which as we run along, we could observe the huum, in many fintances, was green towards the Poot of the stalk. From this circumstance, it was concluded, that frequently, particularly in polit or wet seasons, the grain must be kilp-dried. as is done in the north of England, and in Sect land, before it is housed and threshed. The wheat, though sown between the fifteenth and twentieth of May, and probably sometimes ear lier or later, is weighty, and produces a year fine white flour. The voyage down the river. except a few boisterous days, was pleasant. We had some noble views, interspersed here and there with something like villages, chapels an farm houses. Afterwards, we had in prospect braggedness inspired disagreeable sensetions. The greatest curiosities were the scale, whose history and manners were then known to me, but whose living form excited attention, as they were creeping up or basking on the rocks. The perposes perfectly white, in vast droves, played before and around us, and drew my attention and surprise, as none but the black southern porpoise had before come under my view. To come a naturalist, it is necessary a man should travel; it was many years before books could persuade me of the existence of a green-haired monkeys but these were diminutive objects indeed in nature's soule, of comparative imagery, when con-

Q

trasted with the immense river Cadaracqua, or it is now called St. Lawrence, second to no diver in the world, unless it be the La Plate of South America. Making this observation, you must understand me to include within it, the lake Superior, and the waters which feed that Off Gasny Point, where we coon arrived, in a due north line, across the island of Anticosta, the river is about ninety miles wide. Steering with favorable weather, the island of St. Johns came in view; passing it, and the Gut of Canceaux, experiencing some stormy weather upon the ocean, and a few difficulties, we hanpily arrived at New-York on the eleventh of September, 1776, and anchored three miles south of Governor's Island. Now it was, for the first time, that we heard of the dilemma in which our country stood. THE WATER A STORY

The battle of Long Island, on the twenty seventh of August, had been unsuccessfully fought by our troops, many of whom were prisoners. th such hurrying times, intersourses between hostile armies in the way of negotiation upon iny point, are effected with difficulty. We had waited patiently several weeks, to be disembarked on our own friendly shore; yet tantalized very day with reports, that to morrow we should be put on shore: same, and in a little while all, began to fear it was the intention of General Howe, to detain us as prisoners in opposition to the good will of sir Guy Carleton. This notion had so strongly impressed the minds of my friend dector Thomas Gibson, and a young man called John Blair, of Hendricks, that they determined to escape from the ship. They were, both of them, athletic and able hodied men, and nost advoit. Gibson planned the manner of eser 19

HO

ed.

nti-

ide.

l of

Gut

her

AD

of outh

first

our

1/5C+

uzht

ners:

veen

upon

BACE

ark

lized

. WE

little

on of

ppo-

This

ds of

oung

they

Rere.

, and

of es

cape; its ingeniousness, hazard, boldness of exe eution and eventual success, received the applause of all, but was disapproved, upon the principle that it trenched upon their honor, and would impede our release. The story is this; Gibson and Blair, in the evening, dressed in shirts and trowsers, were upon the main deck with their customary flapped hats, on their heads. Gibson gave me a squeeze of the hand in token of farewell; he was greeted kindly, for he was the brother of my soul. He and his companion went to the forecastle, where there were two farge New-Foundland dogs, each of which had his party, or rather his partizans among the crew. These, the adventurers hissed at each other. The dogs being engaged with their usual fury, attracted the attention of the sailors and many of the prisoners; they took this opportunity of stripping and letting themselves down at the bow into the water. Leaning over the sides of the ship, in company of some friends, in the secret, and unregardful of the dogs, we awaited the management of the The last lighted cloud appeared low in · flight. the west. Something extraordinary passed along the side, a foolish fellow asked, "what is that?" "a wave, you fool-a mere deception of sight," was answered. It was the head of Gibson, covered by his large black hat. Within a few yards of Gibson came Blair, but with a smaller hat, he was obvious; his white skin discovered him. but luckily the attention of the "ignoramus" was engaged another way. These daring men swam to the barge at the stern, entered it, and slipped the rope. They had rowed a thousand yards before the boat was missed. The other boats of our ship, and of those near us, were despatched after the runaways, it was too late, the fugitives had too much of a start to be easily overtaken. They landed, (having rowed shout five miles,) naked, in our own country, somewhere in the vicinity of Bergen-neck, and bartered the boat for some ordinary clothing. They waited on general Washington, who disapproved of their demeanor.

A short time after the foregoing occurrence, most beautiful and luminous, but baleful sight pocurred to us, that is, the city of New-York on are. One night, (Sept. 22,) the watch on deck gave a loud notice of this disaster. Running upon deck, we could perceive a light, which at the distance we were from it, (four miles,) was apparently of the size of the flame of a candle. This light to me, appeared to be the burning of an old and noted tavern, called the "Fighting Cocks," (where, ere this I had lodged,) to the east of the battery, and near the wharf, wind was southwardly, and blew a fresh gale; the flames at this place, because of the wind, increased rapidly. In a moment we saw another light at a great distance from the first, up the North river. The latter light seemed to be an original, distinct and new formed fire, near a celebrated tavern in the Broadway called "White-Hall." Our anxiety for the fate of so fine a city, caused much solicitude, as we harboured suspicions that the enemy had fired it. The flames were fanned by the briskness of the breeze, and drove the destructive effects of the element on all sides. When the fire reached the spire of a large steeple, south of the tavern, which was attached to a large church, the effect upon the eye was astonishingly grand. If we could have divested ourselves of the knowledge,

001

the

ap-

dle.

to a

ting

the

The

ale :

in-

her

the .

an.

cel-

ite-

e B

red

The

the

the

the

ern.

fect.

WO

dge,

that it was the property of our fellow-citizens which was consuming, the view might have been esteemed sublime, if not pleasing. The deck of our ship, for many hours, was H at noon day. In the commencement of the conflagration, we observed many bouts putting off from the Beet, rowing speedily towards the city; our bout was of the number. This circumstance repelled the idea, that our enemies were the incendiaries, for indeed they professedly went in aid of the inhabitants. The boat returned about day light, and from the relation of the officer and the crew, we clearly discorned that the burning of New York was the act of some mad-cap Americans. The sailors told us in their blunt manner, that they had seen one American hanging by the heels dead, having a bayenet wound through his breast. They named him by his Christian and sirname, which they eaw imprinted on his arm; they averred he was caught in the fact of firing the houses. They told us also, that they had seen one person, who was taken in the fact, tossed into the fire, and that severals who were stealing, and suspected as incendiaries, were bayonetted. Summary justice is at no time kaudable, but in this instance it may have been correct. If the Greeks could have been resisted at Persepolis. every soul of them ought to have been massaered. The testimony we received from the pailors, my own view of the distinct beginnings of the fire in various spots, remote from each other, and the manner of its spreading. impressed my mind with the belief, that the burning of the city was the doings of the most low and vile of persons, for the purposes, not only of thieving, but of devastation. This seem.

Q 2

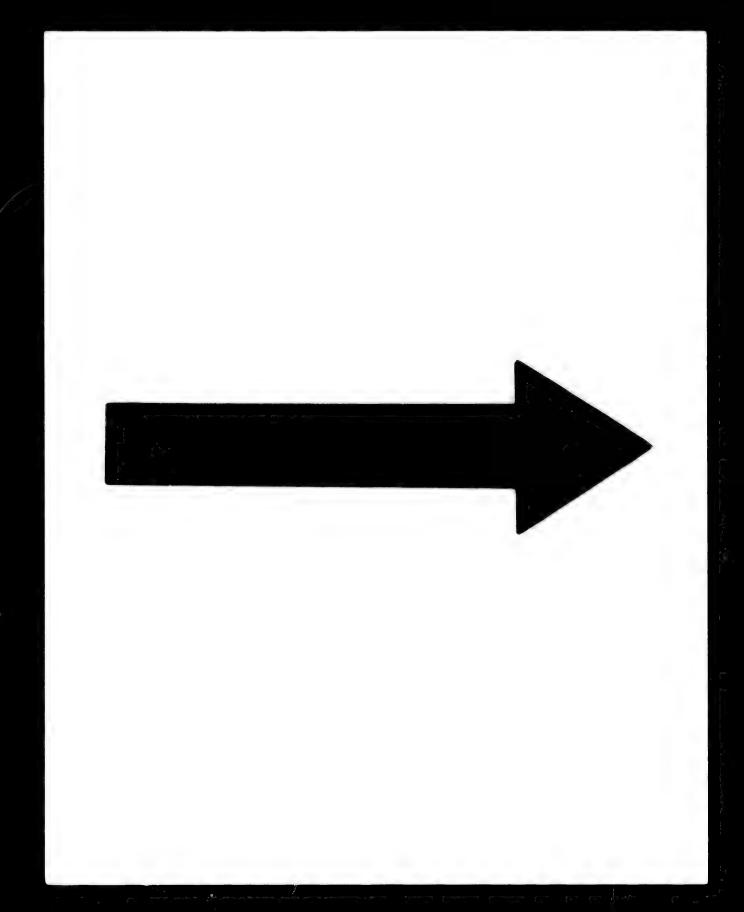
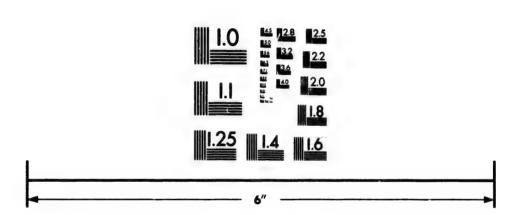




IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)

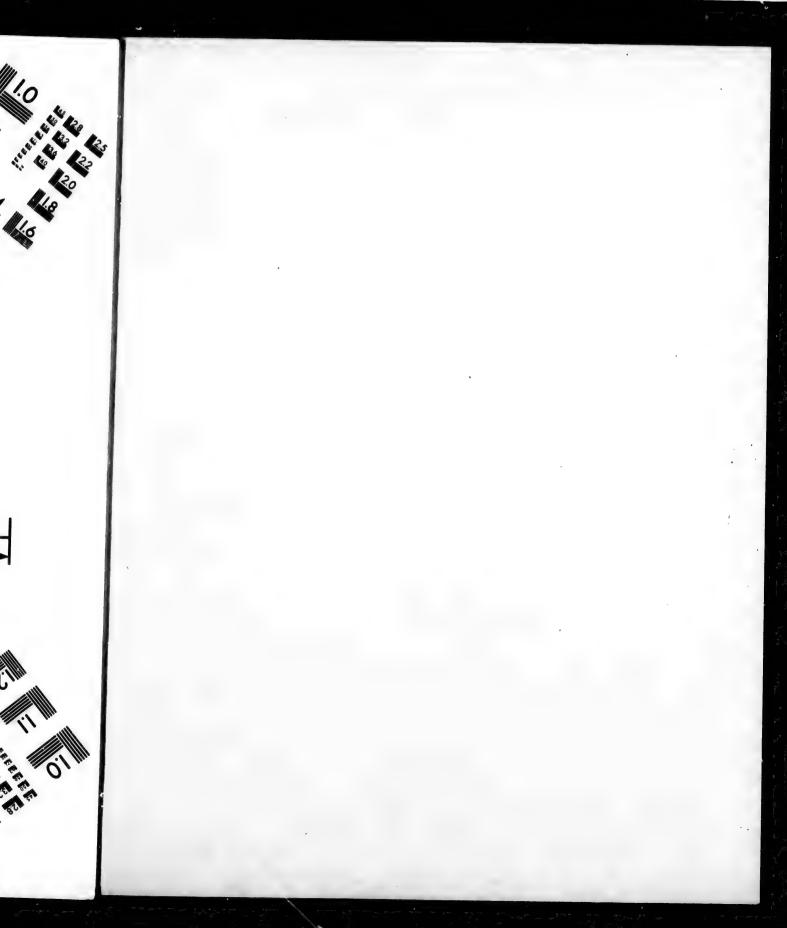


STATE OF THE STATE

Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE STATE



ed too, the general sense, not only of the British, but that of the prisoners then aboard the transports. Laying directly south of the city. and in a range with Broadway, we had a fair and full view of the whole process. The pensons in the ships nearer to the town than we were, uniformly held the same opinion. It was not until some years afterwards, that a doubt was created; but for the honor of our country and its good name, an accription was made, of the firing of the city, to accidental circumstances. It may be well, that a nation, in the heat and turbulence of war, should endeavor to promote its interests, by the propagating reports of its own innocency and prowess, and accusing its enemy of flagrant enormity and dastardliness, (as was done in this particular case,) but when peace comes, let us, in God's name, do justice, to them and ourselves. Basoness and villany are the growth of all climes, and of all nations. Without the most numerous, and the most eogenf testimony, as the fact occurred within my own view, the eloquence of Cicero could not convince me that the firing was accidental. Some time after the burning of the city. we understood that we were to be embarked in shallops, and landed at Elizabethtown point

The intelligence, enused a sparkling in every eye. On the next day, about noon, we were in the hoats:—adverse winds retarded us. It was ten or eleven at night, before we landed;—the moon shape beautifully. Morgan stood in the bow of the hoat, making a spring, not easily surpassed, and falling on the earth, as it were to grasp it—eried "Oh my country." We that were near him, pursued his example. Now a race commenced, which in quickness, could

Brit-

rd the

e city, a fair

e beil-

n. It that a

of our

on was

ion, in

deavor

ng re-

nd ac-

d dagcase.)

me, do

ss and

of all

nd the

curred

Cicero s acci-

e city.

ked in

the sale

every

ere in

t was

-the

n the

sun-

re to

that

OW A

bluo

scarcely be exceeded, and soon brought us to Elizabethtown. Here, those of us who were drawsy spent on uneasy night. Being unexpected guests, and the town full of troops, no quarters were provided for as. Joy rendered beds uspless, we did not close our eyes till daylight. Singing, dancing, the Indian bulloo, in shorts every apecies of voelferousness was adopt od by the men, and many of the most respectable sorgeants, to express their extreme pleasure. A stranger coming among them, would have pronounced them mad, or at least intoxicated: though since noon, neither food nor liquor had nassed our lips; thus the passions may at times have an influence on the human frame, as incbriating as wine, or any other liquot. The morning brought us plenty, in the farm of rations of beef and bread. Hunger allayed, my only desire was, to proceed homewards. Monev was wanting. How to obtain it in a place. where all my friends and acquaintances were alike poor and destitute, gave me great anxiety and pain. Walking up the street very melancholy, unknowing what to do. I observed a waggon, built in the Laneaster, county fashion. (which at that time, was peculiar in Jerseys) unloading stores for the troops; come or coming. The owner seeing me, grasping my hand with fervor, teld me, every one believed me to be dead. Telling him our story in a compendious manner, the good, old man, without solicitation, presented me two silver dollars, to be repaid at Lancaster. They were gladly received. * My heart became easy. The next day, in company with the late colonel Febiger, and The state and the spirit of the state of the state of the spirit of

but See Note XVI and I but would work In and

the present general Nichols, and some other gentlemen, we procured a light return wargon. which gave us a cast as far as Princeton. Here we had the pleasure of conversing with Dr. Witherspoon, who was the first that informed us. of a resolution of Congress to augment the army. It gave us pleasure, as we had devoted ourselves individually. to the service of our country. The next day, if not incorrect, we proceeded on foot, no carriage of any kind being procurable. Night brought as up at a farmhouse, somewhere near Bristol. The owner was one of us, that is, a genuine whig. He requested us to tarry all night, which we declined. He presented us a supper, that was gratefully received. Hearing our story, lie was much affected. We then tried to prevail on him, to take us to Philadelphia, in his light waggon. It was objected that it stood loaded with hay in the barn floor; his sons were asleep or abroad. We removed these objections, by unloading the hay, while this good citizen prepared the horses. Mounting, we arrived at the "Harp and Crown," about two o'clock in the morning. To us, it was most agreeable, that we pascel through the streets of Philadelphia. in the night time, as our clothing was not only threadbare but shabby. Here we had friends and funds. A gentleman advanced me a sum -anficient to enable use to exchange my leggins and mackacias, for a pair of stockings and shoes, and to bear my expenses home. A day and a half, brought me to the arms of my beloved pa-The second was the transfer of the way

At Philadelphia, I waited upon a consin of my mother's, Mr. Owen Biddle, then a member of the "Council of Safety," who informed

The second secon

me, that while in captivity, he had procured other me a lieutenancy. My heart was otherwise enaggon, gaged. Morgan the hero! had promised and Here obtained for me, a captaincy in the Virginiar. Wiline. Following the fortunes of that bold and ned us. judicious commander, my name might have been the aremblazoned, in the rolls of patriotic fame. But devoted alas! in the course of eight weeks, after my of our return from captivity, a slight cold, caught ect. we when skating on the ice of Susquehanna, or in ind bepursuing the wild-turkey, among the Kittatinny farmhills, put an end to all my visionary schemes owner of ambition. This cause renewed that aboming. Ho able disorder, the scurvy, (which I had supwe deposed, was expelled from my system,) accomat was panied by every morbid symptom, which had lie was been so often observed at Quebee, attendant vail on upon others. The medical men of all classes. is light being engaged in the army, that species of asloaded sistance was unattainable, in the degree requiasleep site, lameness, as you now observe it, was the one, by consequence. Would to God! my extreme sufon preferings, had then ended a life, which since, at the has been a tissue of labor, pain, and misery. in the that and the second of the second o elphia, tonly riends and the second of the second o asum eggine

bacs.

and a d pa-

rmed

isomerating in in the second of the second in the second of the har bendance may a net but abarent and a which is the state of the state of the state of Line dilitation of report The state of the s has a filter to the engine and the second of to the light is the leading of the time of the species of the The rest of the second of the second of the second Burger of the state of the second state of the the the whitehalt a county the make or or still appropriate and the The country of the second of the second of the second RIMBERS AND THE STATE OF THE ST is interested in the second of The first in the source of the second second second in the Certification (in the control of the Will distribute and the territorial section and a few and And the same of th Light to so the first the state of the state Tree wife amore entered to the first the first and the St. fire in services from the way to represent the This Market Co. The Worldwife They and your a Ser Age Chat Land and a land of the first of has hide white and the property of the mark makes the

NOTES.

ne a significación de como estados. En la como estado en la como e

n en la substituta de la compania de la compania de la compaña de la com

and the first of the property and an extension of the teachers. The second of the seco

ng tri groupe in the side of the first indicate and the side of the growing side of the side of the growing side of the growin

na de la companya del companya del companya de la c

entry from the large and the frequency of the first the fill of the The gentlemen composing this party, were unwilling to impose upon me, any thing above my apparent strength, yet in the heyday of youth, I would clap a canoe on my back, and run a hundred yards across a carrying-place. This is done by a particular mode of management. There is a broad stave, some thing like a flour barrel-stave, but strait and thicker, with two perforations in it, an inch or more apart, towards the middle of the stave. A thong of stout leather is inserted through those holes, and tightly bound to the central cross-bar of the canoe. The carrier swings the canoe by a sudden jerk upon his shoulders, and which he can handle with ease, throwing the hollow side of the canoe on his back, the stave, if it may be so called, resting principally on the hind part of the head, and the prominences of the shoulders. Thus he may, if a strong man, pass over a consider able space of ground of a difficult nature, in a short time with much speed.

NOTE II. page 23.

In traversing this meadow, which was a beautiful plain, one of the party, found the horns of a moose-

deer, which from appearances had been shed in the foregoing summer, or perhaps in the beginning of autumn: being then about five feet ten inches high, Getchell facetiously, yet gravely, insisted by way of measurement, that I should stand under the main fork. The crown of my head, rubbed against the crown-work of the horns. This to all of us, was matter of great surprize. However, in a short time afterwards the circumstance of size, was thought little of, when we came into contact with the living animal, upon whose head such horns grew. There is a paucity of words for a description upon paper, of the enormous dimensious of the male moose which we saw, and of their horns. The male-deer bears horns; the female bears none. Those horns, which we examined minutely, were of a large size, but not so large as some we saw on the living deep. About midway of the horn, from the crown of the head, there is a broad, flat part of the horn, cailed the blade, which, in the specimen under examination, was full two of my spans, or nearly twenty inches from whence branched the proud antiers or proug. There is no beast of the for est more hand somely decorated, unless it be the rein-deer of the north of Europe and Asia. In the evenings, in the first asension of the Kennebee and Dead-rivers, sitting around our solitary smoke fires, we have often, seen those stately deer, passing the river in droves, sometimes of fifteen or twenty in number, the one walking after the other in the accustomed path, but due care and discipline kept our arms quiet: The country around Natanis house, a circle of ten or fifteen miles, was at that time, an admirable whunting ground." One day, suddenly passing a sharp point of the river, about five miles below Natanis cabbin. we as suddenly feil back. We wanted fresh food. Regardless of what might follow, Steele permitted us to fire. We had seen five or six of those monstrous deer, standing in the water knee-deep, feeding on their favorite food, the red willow. Boyd, Wheeler and myself passed the river, out of sight of the moose, ABOUTH A STORY TO A STORY OF THE BOARD A PART OF THE

in the

ning of

s high, way of

e main

nst the

as mat-

e afterlittle of.

animal.

a pau-

ne enorwe saw.

ns; the

large as

a broad,

in the

y spans,

hed the

the for

be the

In the

te fires.

sing the

in numistomed s quiet:

ten or

point of

cabbin.

h food.

tted us

nstrous

ing on

heeler

moose

in the most cautionary manner. The stream here was not more than sixty yards wide. We approached them through the thick underwood, which clothed the bank. Boyd preceded. The rustling of the leaves alarmed the deer. They threw up their heads. What a sight! The antlers of several of them, seemed to exceed in size, those we had already seen. Boyd apprehensive they were about to run from us, fired without giving Wheeler and myself, an opportunity to take a stand, but the greatest misfortune was, that the worthy Boyd, had neglected to clean his gun that day, it made long fire, and but a trifling report. The bullet scarcely reached the deer. Wheeler and myself were creeping to our places, when Boyd's gun disturbed the animals. The guns in our hands, were ineffectually discharged. This jejune occurrence, is related merely, for the introduction of a single observation. When the bull moose, at the rustling of the leaves, and afterwards when Boyd fired, threw up their heads —the tips of their horns, seemed to me to stand eighteen feet in the air. The ridge of the shoulder, seemed seventeen hands high. The largest of these animals was a lusus natura. The moose in ordinary, is of an ash-colored grey. The one I speak of, was flecked, in large spots of red, on a pure white ground. His skin, if we could have obtained it, would have been a valuable curiosity.

NOTE III. Page 29.

The birch-bark-canoe, as intimated before, in the body of the work, is not only a curious, but a most ingenious machine. So far as my descriptive powers extend, you shall have its construction, described in writing, but without the aid of the pencil, it seems to be almost impossible to convey to you a just and accurate comprehension, of the distinct parts of this beautiful piece of water-craft. Having had several opportunities to observe the manner of the formation of the birch-bark canoe, in its various stages, a description of

its sections may not be disagreeable to you. In the construction of the canoe, the bow and stern pieces are separate frames, while in dimensions, and made of cedar, cypress, or any other light wood; yet very light, and so well or tightly bound by tenons, as to require a considerable effort to break them. These bow and stern pieces, suppose a cance of ten, or even fifty feet, are connected by faths, with that which I have called gunwales, (gunnels,) correspondent in size with the intended length of the cance. These gunwales are made from the toughest and best of the timber that the country produces. The gun-wales are strongly secured to the head and storn by tenons and the 'cedar root in a most nest and strong murner. The ribs of the cance, according to its vize, are from two to five inches in diameter, of the straightest cedar, or fir, without knots, closely fitted together, side by side, and well sewed by means of an awl to the gun-wates. This frame is covered with the yellow-birch-rind, an eighth, a sixth, or a fourth of un inch thick. This bark, when applied to canoes, is from two to four feet in length; commensurate with the extension of the bow and stern from each other. Each part of this bark, where the seams theet, is nicely sewed together by the split codar root, these seams are then pitched over in a ridge, by a Mard pitch, in the width of perhaps an inch or mere, so as to make the vessel, truly that which scamen call water-tight. But to this clumsy attempt to describe to you a boat, which you have never seen, and perhaps never will see, it seems requisite to add another observation. The bark which encircles the bottom of the cance, is strongly attached to the gun-wales by cedar root, much in the same marmer as I have seen you threading wire, for the making of artificial flowers. This bank, thus prepared and applied, speaking comparatively, (great with small,) is a much stronger material, then your thread, either of flax or silk. The gunwale was as neatly laced by the cedar, and almost as ornamental, and equally strong in texture, as the canes we sometimes see from India, covered with splits of

In the

oces are

nade of

y light,

squire a

ow and

fty feet,

called

ith the

les are

that the

secured

reet in

dance.

t knots.

wed by

ume is

sixth.

applied

mmen-

n from

senins

ar root,

, by a

ere, so

en call

erhaps

of the

cedar

n you

owers.

com-

er ing-

The

tost as

canes

its of

ratteen, or some other pliant plant, of southern growth. The paddles are uniformly made of ash, where it can be obtained, but most usually of birch, or even of softer wood, in this part of Canada. Many of the paddles which I saw, were double-bladed, that is a blade at each end of the handle or pole, and in the hands of a strong person would be from its formation, apparently as light as a feather. The pushing-pole was of the same kind of materials, but light, and if iron could be had, was shod at the but-end. The rapid and rocky rivers which those poor people the Indians, must ascend and descend in their hunting excursions, and which they do with inconceivable dexterity, requires a quickness of motion of the body, particularly the arms, which is: truly astonishing. The paddle, at this moment used on the right, and then instantly cast on the left hand of the canon, requires a colority of action which none but such as are used to those exercises dare undertake. In those instances the double-bladed paddle, saves half the time which would be employed by the single bladed, in these arduous but necessary labours. Activity and agility, from the circumstance, of the precarious ness of an Indian life, and their manner of subsisting. become in their education a primary parental motive without those qualities, an Indian can never acquire fame, and is often starved.

It often re-exhilirates my mind, when reflecting on the waywardness and unhappiness of my life, to remember the occurrences, (July 1773,) in a part of a days journey from the windlass of the old carrying place, on the south side of the river, west of Niagara, by a path which led us to a celebrated fountain, a little below the brow of the hill, called Mount Pleasant, and thence to the falls. My youthful imagination was greatly excited. The company consisted of a French gentleman, my uncle John Henry, and my self. The Frenchman was a trader who had but just arrived from the Illinois country, and had dealt beyond the Mississippi. When we came to Stedman's, his canoe, attended by three or four couriers de bois, lay on the heach turned upside down, with an immense number

of packs of beaver, press-packed, strewed around, perhaps the whole might have been 3000 lb. wt. The canoe was of birch, fifty feet in length, most beautifully made, its breadth was probably from six to seven feet in the middle, I examined with a curiosity, such as a boy of my age might possess.

NOTE IV-Page 53.

Morgan was a strict disciplinarian. Permit an anecdote. He had obtained the command of the rifle corps from Arnold, without any advertence to the better claim of Hendricks, who, though the youngest man was of the three captains, in point of rank, by the dates of commissions, the superior officer. Hendricks, for the sake of peace in the army, and of good order, prudently and good naturedly acquiesced in his assumption of the command, for Morgan had seen more service in our former wars.

At this piace, Morgan had given it out in orders, that no one should fire. One Chamberlaine, a worthless fellow, who did not think it worth while to draw his bullet, had gone some hundreds of yards into the woods, and discharged his gun. Lieut, Steele happened to be in that quarter at the time; Steele had but arrived at the fire, where we sat, when Morgan, who had seen him coming, approached our camp, and seated himself within our circle. Presently Chamberlaine came, gun in hand, and was passing our fire, towards that of his mess. Morgan called to the soldier—acoused him as the defaulter—this the man, (an arrant liar;) denied. Morgan appealed to Steele. Steele admitted he heard the report, but knew not the party. who discharged the gun. Morgan suddenly springing: to a pile of billets, took one; and swore he would knock the accused down unless he confessed the fact. Instantly, Smith seized another billet, and swore he would strike Morgan if he struck the man. Morgan knowing the tenure of his rank, receded. This was TORRESTED TO THE PART OF THE STATE OF THE

, per-

ie ca-

lifully

feet

25 R

betman: dates

pru-

Dtion:

ce in

ders,

orth-

draw

the

but

who

cat-

aine

ards:

-ac-

rant

ad-

arty.

ing:

ock

In

gan:

vas:

the only spirited act I knew of Smith. Such were the rough-hewn characters, which, in a few subsequent years, by energy of mind and activity of body, bore us safely through the dreadful storms of the revolution. Morgan was of an impetuous temper, yet withal, prudent in war, as he was fearless of personal danger: His passions were quick and easily excited, but they were soon cooled. This observation is applicable to many men of great talents, and to none more than Morgan. His severity, at times, has made me shudder, though it was necessary, yet it would have been a pleasing trait in his character, if it had been less rigidi.

NOTE V. page 64

I cannot exactly recollect the time, but the records of Government will show, that this miserable man, was indicted of a burglary and convicted. His respectable brother, Mr. Jacob Shaeffer of Lancaster, (Penn.) applied to me, to certify in his favor, It was in 1780 or 1781, to the president and council, who had the power of pardon. The representation was, in substance similar to the present. This part of our transactions, rests in my memory; but the impression is: so strong, that I cannot forget it. It gave me great pleasure to imagine, that probably I might again contribute to the saving the life of a man, which I had actually saved once before. At that time, by our law, the punishment of burglary was death, and my compatriot Shaeffer, was under that sentence. My soul was grieved. The same of the sa

In a drunken bout at Philadelphia, he had blindly stumbled into a house, which he took to be his lodgings. Here detected in one of the chambers, he was charged as a felon. Gracious God! upon the superfices of thy earth, there was never a more unoffending soul. He could scarcely see a yard before him.

It has amused and pleased me often, to hear the extels me. He is now industrious.

The fate of James Warner, (see p. 65.) among others, was really lamentable. He was young, handsome in appearance, not more than twenty-five years of age; he was athletic and seemed to surpase in bodily strength. Yet withal, he was a dolt. His wife was beautiful, though coarse in manners. The husband on the other hand, was a poor devil, constantly out of view, or in the background of the picture.

We heard nothing of them after entering the marsh, and until a month had elapsed at Quebec. In December, the wife or widow of poor James Warner, came to our quarters on the Low-grounds, bearing her huaband's rifle, his powder-horn and pouch. She appeared fresh and rosy as ever. This arose from the reli-

gious and gratuitous spirit of the Canadians.

The story Mrs. Jemima Warner told, was extremely affecting, and may be worth remembering, as it is something like a sample of the whole of our distresses.

and intelerable disasters.

The husband was a great eater. His stores of provisions, after the partition, at the head of the Chaudiere, were in a little time consumed. The consummate wife ran back from the marsh, and found her heleved husband sitting at the foot of a tree, where he

said he was determined to die.

The tender-hearted woman, attended her ill-fated hushand several days, urging his march forward; he again to down. Finding all her solicitations could not induce him to rise, she left him, having placed all the bread in her postession, between his legs with a canteen of water. She bore his arms and ammunition to Quebec, where she recounted the story. The nephews of Mautnis, afterwards at Quebec, confirmed the relation of this good woman. For when going up, and returning down the river with our inestimable friend MCleland, she argist them, suffused in tears to take her husband on heard. They were necessarily doof to her entreation. Thus perished this unfortunate man, at a period of his age, when the budily powers, are generally in their full perfection. He and many others, who died in the wilderness, lost their lives by an inconsiderate gluttony. They are as much at a meal, as ought to have been in our circumstances the provision of four days, and a march of one hundred miles. Young men, without knowledge or a previous experience, are very difficult to govern by sage-advice, when the rage of

hunger assails.

therti

in ape

C WES

Yet

hand.

back-

aarsh.

cem-

came

bun-

reli-

emely

.6 18

esses

pho-

sum

re be

huse

again

duce

en of

Nan

do no

bend

mguo:

To conclude this lengthy note, allow me to introduce to you, another instance of human misery, which came under my eye, in this dolorous and dreadful march. As was before observed in the body of the work "At the head of the Chaudiere, it was given out by the officers, that order would not be required from the soldiery in the march, &c." Yet the companies, being in the most part either fellow-townsmen. or from the same county adhered together, bound by that affectionate attachment, which is engendered by the locality of birth, or the habitudes of long and severe services, in a communion and endurance of hardships and desperate adventures. It appears to me, to be a principle of the human mind, "that the more hardships we endure in company of each other, the greater becomes our esteem and affection for our fellow-sufferers." For myself, this is said from experimented woe and extreme calamity.

We had no path, the river was our guide. One day, either the second or third of this march, a mountain jutting in a most precipitate form into the river, compelled us to pass the margin of the stream upon a long log, which had been brought thither by some former freshet. The bark and limbs of the tree had been wern away by the rubbings of the ice, and the trunk lay lengthwise along the narrow passage, smooth and slippery, and gorged the pass. This difficulty had collected here a heterogeneous mass of the in ops, who claimed the right of passage according to the order of coming to it. The log was to be footed, or the water of the depth of three or four foot, must be waded. There was no alternative. An eastern man, bete-footed,

A SAF TE TO GO IN AN APPEAR AR AR ADON A TE

bare-headed, and thinly clad, lean and wretched from abstinence, with his musket in hand, passed the log irmmediately before me. His foot slipped, and he fell several feet into the water. We passed on regardless of his fate. Even his immediate friends and comrudes. many of whom were on the log at the same moment. did not deign to lend him an assisting hand. Death stared us in the face. I gave him a sincere sigh at parting, for to lose my place in the file, might have been fatal. This pitiable being died in the wilderness. The hard fate of many others might be recapitulated. but the dreadful tale of incidents, if truly told, would merely serve to lacerate the heart of pity, and harrow up the feelings of the soul of benevolence. Tears many years since, have often wetted my cheeks, when recollecting the disasters of that unfortunate campaigns the memorable exit of my dearest friends, and of many worthy fellow-citizens, whose worth at this time, in embalmed solely in the breasts of their surviving associates. Seven died sheerly from famine; and many others by disorders arising from hard service in the wilderness.

NOTE VI. Page 113, and NOTE XI. Page 144.

aton support water the best many to

words in our in a 41,00

In relation to the small-pox, the circumstance about to be related, is most assuredly true, as it is known to me of my own particular knowledge. A number of momen loaded with the infection of the small-pox, came into our cantonments.

In the spring of the year 1776, our army was reduced by decease of men, or debilitation of body; so that they could not act effectively, and in the eyes of the world, a disreputable retreat took place, which it was not then quite prudent to explain. Now it may be safely asserted, that great numbers of the soldiers inoculated themselves for the small-pox, by laceration under the larger mails, by means of pins or needles, either to obtain an avoidance of duty, or to get over that hornital disorder in an easy and speedy way.

NOTE VII, Page 123.

The death of my friend Boyd, was to me as a thunderbolt; painful in an excessive degree; many a tear has since been shed to his manes. In the autumn of 1779, he commanded a company of rifle-men, of the first Pennsylvania regiment. When Sullivan had penetrated into the Seneca country, in the neighborhood of the Genessee river. Boyd, as my information is: from various gentlemen, was ordered with a band of twenty choice men, before daylight to make an excursion towards an Indian village, on the river Genessee, (which flows north into lake Ontario,) at a distance of eight miles, for the purpose of making discoveries. In his return, arriving at a rising ground, a knoll, he heard a rustling of the leaves in his front : an enemy was suspected; he gathered his men around him, each taking his tree. The enemy was sightless to Boyd, and his party, yet the approach around him was sensible to every one. Boyd not knowing the number of his assailants, it is said, considered them as a small body of observation. This party of Indians, probably one thousand, encompassed Boyd and his men, gradually: a defence worthy of the character of Boyd took place. Every man he had was killed, except three, who broke through the Indians, and brought the doleful tidings to our camp, Boyd was taken and carried alive, to the Indian-town, where he was tortured after their savage custom, and his body mangled in the most horrible manner. General Simpson, who was then with the army, assures me, that on the following day, when the troops arrived at the town, in the wigwams, they found a number of fresh scalps stretched in the usual manner on small hoops, and painted. The head of Boyd lay in one of the cabins, newly dissevered. His scalp was still moist and hooped and painted. Simpson know it by its long brown and silky hair : it is now preserved? as a relic of our friend. An officer, (captain A. Hen-) derson,) lately, in describing this unequal, but arduous fight, upon the part of Boyd, told me, " that the hands

when paignt many ne, is ng as-many in the

og im-

he fell

irdless

arades.

oment

Death

ighat

have

erness.

ulated.

would

arrow

Tears

bout on to er of pame

they ld, a then

tho obof the dead men, in many instances, were fast closed upon the hair of Indians."

To give you a more perfect idea of the brutality of savage torture, and of heart-rending sensations. do no better than to lay before you, the letter of the honorable Thomas Campbell, of the senate, who himself has been a mertyr in our cause. He saw the chepse of the unfortunate Boyd on the following day, and interred it. Since the death of colonel Crawford. we know nothing like the present martyrdom, in the passe of liberty; and it is to be hoped, from the prudence and strength of the federal government, nothing of the kind will again occur in our future wars with the aborigines of our country.

> "SEVATE CHAMBER, LANCASTER " January 30th, 1809.

4 SIR.

"Captain lieutenant Thomas Boyd, belonging " to the riflemen of the state of Pennsylvania, was most 4 inhumanly murdered by the Indians. His death oc-" curred on the 13th day of September, 1779, at the "Genesace Castle, on general Sullivan's expedition to "the north-west-ward, against the Six-nation Indians. . " He was sent on the night of the 12th of September, 4 from the camp, near a lake called "Conesus," with "a party of men, consisting of twenty soldiers, five the volunteers and an Indian chief, named Han-Jost. 4 belonging to the Oneida nation: in all twenty-seven. 4 in number. They were sent by general Sullivan, "to reconneitre an Indian-town, supposed to be about a six miles distant from the camp. On the morning " of the 19th of September, the army took up the line 4 of murch before sunrise, but marching a short distance, was obliged to halt, till the pioneers made a hridge over a morses, otherwise the cannon could st not have been brought up. The town that captain "Boyd was taken to, was evacuated by all excepts "two indians, one was on horseback, the other was: " heading a cow James Elliot and Timothy Murphy " were sent to stop them, they both discharged their

closed

lity of
I can
of the
himw the
g day,
where
in the
pruothing

100. nging most ch oct the ion to dians. aber. with: five: -Jost OVOD. livan bout ning line disde s ould plain.

cent

Was:

phi

heir

guns at the same time, the one that led the tow was a killed, the other though severely wounded escaped. Boyd returning slowly, expecting to meet the army saw an Indian start up and run off. It was with great difficulty, that Boyd stopt the men from pursuit, at the request of Han-Jost, who said the Indian was only "a ranner," sent to draw them into an ambuscade. Eighteen of the soldiers were killed, and "Han-Jost the Oncida chief, was made a greater sacrifice, than any of the white men, who fell or were "taken at that place.

"Captain Boyd and Michael Parker were made prisoners, and taken to the Genessee Castle, and there most inhumanly murdered. Boyd's head was taken of and totally skinned, his right foot, from the ball of the heel to the toes, was laid open as if with a knife. He was cut open across the bottom of his belly, and his bowels were taken out, and a very long knife, was sticking in between his shoulders, descending to the vital parts. This seems to have been the

"Coup de grace:

"General Simpson and myself, were sent to see

"the corpse of Boyd interred. I spread a blanket on

"the ground beside him, we then turned the corpse

"over on it. I took the head of the deceased, and put

"it as near the neck as possible. I procured a needle

"and thread from one of the taylors, and sewed the

"corpse up as well as I could. As to the head of

"Michael Parker, it could not be found. All the

"flesh was cut out, from his shoulders downward,

"and otherwise his body was most inhumanly mangled.

We interred the corpses of both, near the Genesw see Castle, in separate graves, on the 14th day of Sepw tember, 1779.

" I am Sir,

"Your humble servant
"THOMAS GAMPBELL.

" Late a captain of the fourth
"Pennsylva regiment,

"To THE HON. JOHN JOS. HENRY."

Though we have no account from an eye witness, of the barbarous manner in which captain Boyd was tortured, yet we may conceive from the appearance of his body, that the most malignant and hellish pains, were exercised upon it. The being embowelled, conveys an idea of a known mode of Indian torment: the fixing an end of the entrails to the stake, and compelling the prisoner by fire and blows, to run till the conglomerated mass is expended. Upon the subject of these tortures, look at Doctor Colden's History of the Mohawks, and Judge Smith's History of New-York.

Colonel Cambell is of opinion, that the wound along the sole of captain Boyd's foot, was made before the savages brought him to their (Castle) or village. His reason is, that the wound was filled with bits of rotten branches of wood, and small pieces of leaves. The conjecture may be true, as Indian punishment, at its acme, is to give the greatest degree of pain.

NOTE VIII. page 125.

get in the state of

er win et en

Of the treatment of Ethan Allen, at the time spoken of we knew nothing but from report, which we then thought well-grounded, and the truth of which, at this day, there is no reason to doubt. He was a man of much peculiarity of character. Large, powerful of body, a most ferocious temper, (fearing neither God nor man,) of a most daring courage, and a pertinacity of disposition, which was unconquerable. and very astonishing in all his undertakings: withal he had the art of making himself beloved, and revered by all his followers. When he was taken in the Isle of Montreal, in 1775, the government found it necessary to confine him in a cage, as one would a wild beast, and thus aboard ship, he was transported to Quebec. What his treatment was during this voyage to England, is unknown to me.

This however, is known, that for many years, he was a prisoner in England, returning from his captivity to America, he brought with him a manuscript, which he afterwards entitled "The Oracle of Reason." My beloved children, it is the furthest from my thought, to confine your knowledge to narrow; bounds; when you dip into scriptural history, dip deep, do not skim the surface of the subject, as many fools have done of late days. Upon a thorough inquiry, your hearts will be animated by a conviction, that there came a Saviour to redeem you from eternal perdition, and to provide for you, an eternal salvation

and state of happiness.

That book was most certainly the composition of Ethan Allen. He was very illiterate; he did not know the orthography of our language. The extent of his learning, probably bounded by some historic chronicles, and a few other books of little account, did not go beyond the scriptures. The gentleman, who gave me the above information, was an elegant scholar, bred at Harvard college. Going to New-York, in the summer of 1786, a friend from mere curiosity, requested me to mirchase the book for him. Being: detained at New-York six weeks by business, I frequently looked into the detestable volume. The argument, if so diabolic a work, can be said to contain argument, was in general arranged, and conducted in the same manner as the "Age of Reason," but in a coarser, and yet a more energetic language, than that of the latter work. On my return to Philadelphia, in a conversation with the Vermontese gentleman, who was still there, "Ethan Allen's bible," became a topic He gave me this curious anecdote, which he averred upon his honor to be true. A young, gentleman, either a scholar of Harvard or Yale college had come into Vermont, and there taught a Allen labored under the want of an amanuensis and transcriber, of knowledge and learning. The scholar to increase his emoluments, became such. Allen attended him daily, standing staff in hand, at

neither and a perable, withal revered the Isle neces-

vitness.

yd was earance

pains.

d. con-

rment:

d com-

till the

subject

tory of

f New-

dalong

ore the e. His f rotten

. The

t, at its

me spo-

hich we

which,

e was a

power-

a wild rted to

voyage

the back of the young man's chair. "Sir," he would say to Allen "this word is misspelled," "Amend. it:" Again "this word is misplaced, the sense is incorrect, &c. Allen, who was most profane, would swear (sometimes raising his staff) "By G " sir, you shall insert it; you shall not alter it." Thus the "Oracle of Reason," came into the world; which, of all books, is the most bluntly vicious, as regards the well-being of society: the salvation of souls; and the happiness of those, who have faith in the redemption, by the blood of our Saviour. But that which is very remarkable, is, that long after the publication of Allen's book, which had fallen into oblivion, even with its readers, that vile reprobate, Thomas Paine, loaded with every crime, which stains and dishonors the christian and the gentleman, (in addition to his shameful practices in life, Paine, as an author, superadded plagiarism,) filched from Ethan Allen, the great body of his deistical and atheistical opinions, which from the time of Celsus, down to the age of Chubb, Tindal and others, have been so often refuted by men. of the utmost respectability of character and fame. When we reflect upon the vicissitudes of this world. its immense revolutions in temporal affairs, the awful persecutions, which occurred in early times, the collisions of opinion and party rage, in the article of religious belief; and the vast body of martyrs, who devoted their lives in support of their faith, we must believe, that there is something more than ordinary; something really Divine in the system of our religion. springing from God himself. In the last ages, we know of many of both sexes, of the soundest and best instructed minds, whom it is almost needless to name, unless it be merely for the purpose of opposing their virtues and characters, to persons of a different mode: of thinking. All of them possessed a firm and solid credence, in the celestial origin of our holy-faith, and some of them sealed their creed with their blood. When such men suffer because of principle, some reliance should be placed on their good sense and

would

mend

is in-

would

. sir,

ch, of

ds the

d the

ption.

of Al-

with.

oaded

chris-

meful

added

great.

which

hubb,

men,

fame.

world.

awful

e col-

of re-

o de-

must

inary:

igion,

s, we

d best

name.

their

mode:

solid

and.

blood. some

as the

knowledge. The terms enthusiasm and madness, have been too often coupled; as conveying the same idea: George Fox, captain Meade, and William Penn, have been called enthusiastic madmen, but we now know. that they acted through the course of the religious parts of their lives, from a conviction of the principles of the gospel, being genuine and absolutely true. However, on this subject, but a few names need be repeated to convey to your minds its importance and solemnity. Many of the greatest men, as it concerns worldly things, were christians." John Huss, Jerome of Prague, Martin Luther, John Calvin, Cranmer, Hooker, Tillotson, of the clergy; of the laity, Sir Thomas Moore, Sir Matthew Hale, Spangenberg, Mosheim, Joseph Addison, Richard Steele, Lord Henry. met or protount learning, pave testified by their lives and writings, a reliance on the merits of the redemption by the blood of Christ Jesus. But when we find those men, supported and re-inforced, by two of the strongest minded men, that ever lived; Sir Isaac Newton and John Locke, who can doubt? When we contrast their opinions, with those of Hobbs, Chubb, Henry St. John, Voltaire, J. J. Rousseau, Beringer. the great Frederick of Prussia, or Mr. Gibbon, how deeply do the last not sink, by the weight of reason and argument? Allen and Paine, are paltry wretches, mere scribblers, if classed with the men last named. Those were beautiful writers, whose language fascinates, but corrupts the youthful mind, these are dull plodders, who know not the principles of their mother tongue; but it is perhaps from the circumstance of illiterateness, that Allen and Paine, have attacked christianity in so gross and indecorous a manner. The maniac Paine, when confined in the prison, Conciergerie, at Paris, seems to boast "that he kept no Bible." This may be true. But the expression shows, that his proper place instead of a common jail, should have been a mad-house.

It shows however, a vanity of mind beyond the bearing of men of understanding. Indeed he was inflated by a supercilious pride, and an imaginary importance, which made his society undesirable. He was one of that class of men, who with a small spice of learning, in company, domineered as if he had been a Johnson. He was almost unbearable to many men, who patronized him, because of the good effect of his works during the revolution. To give you a few instances; the late David Rittenhouse, Esq. one of the most amiable, most ingenious and best of men, treasurer of the state. George Bryan, Esq. the vice-president of the council, a man of great reading and much good sense, Jonathan Sergeant, the attorney general of Pennsylvania, whose oratorical powers, could scarcely be surpassed, character, during the course of the years 77, 78 and '79, were in habits of intimacy with him, but his dogmatic disposition and obstinacy of mind, frequently caused great disgust. Again, colonel Samuel John Attlee, an excellent patriot, and a man of note among us, both in the military and civil capacities of a citizen, gave this anecdote to me, a few months after the occurrence happened. Though all the gentlemen present, approved of the writings of Paine, as they concerned our political state, for they were all of them to a man, good whigs, yet they abhorred him, because of his personal aberrations from virtue, and the decencies of social life. A Mr. Mease of Philadelphia, who was clothier general, had invited a number of gentlemen of the army, then in the city, to dine with him. Among whom were colonel Attlee, colonel Francis Johnson, general Nichols, and many members of the lerislature of whom there was Matthias Slough of Lancaster. You may readily suppose, that the excellent wine of Mr. Mease, exhilarated the company. When returning to their lodgings, colonel Attlee observed Paine coming towards them down Market-street. There comes "Common Sense," says Attlee to the company. "Damn him, says Slough, I shall common

sense him." As he approached the party, they took the wall. Mr. Slough tripped him, and threw him on his back into a gutter, which at that time, was

very offensive and filthy.

bearflated

tance,

ne of

ming.

nson.

atron-

dur-

: the

iable,

state,

uncil.

Jona-

ania.

ssed.

Fand

dog-

ently

John

nong

citi-

after

men

they

hem

ause

cen-

who

itle-

im.

ncia

le-

Cas-

e of

Irn-

ine

ere

m-

This is told, to communicate a trait to you, in the character of Thomas Paine, who did some good, but a vast deal of harm to mankind, "that the very people who were most benefitted by his literary labours, hated him." The company I have spoken of were all men of eminence in the state; men who staked their all, on the issue of the revolution. The writings of Paine as concerns us, are many of them handsomely worded, have pith and much strength of argument, and are in general correct, yet his domestic life and manners, were so very incorrect, that a disgust, which was perhaps right, destroyed every favorable personal feeling towards him. His indelicacy was intolerable. His numbers of Common Sense, the Crisis, and some other of his fugitive pieces, every American who recollects those "trying times," must acknowledge to have been extremely beneficial to our cause. This has often been admitted by our generals Washington, Gates, Greene, &c. but he was compensated. and had the secretaryship for foreign affairs. Like all men of bad principles, he betrayed his trust, and a virtuous Congress displaced him, yet the different states, more than remunerated him for all his writings.

So it is, that that man, who was without virtue, a disturber of society, an ill husband, an unworthy citizen, cloaked by every vice, would now by his "Age of Reason," which he stole from the ignorant Ethan Allen, who was as iniquitous as himself, destroy the peace of mind, and all the hope of happiness in futurity, of those who rely on the redemption of their souls, by the blood of Christ; and that, without substituting or even suggesting, and other manner of faith, tending to quiet the minds of their manner of faith, tending to quiet the minds of their souls, and that personally, for his liedged in the house of my father, during the time that general Howe and Clinton, were in Philadelphia. His host

often regretted the entertainment he gave him. His manners were in opposition and hostile to the observances of the proprieties and due ordinances of social life. Many who approved of his political writings, abominated his detestable mode of living and acting.

If am justified in using these expressions, by an occurrence in 1794, with my own mother. She was a woman of strong understanding, and of unfeigned and rigid belief in the truths of Gospel-history, yet a dispessionate placid and mild religionist. Her heart was so free from thinking ill of any one, that of a truth, of her it might be said "she knew no guile." One day going to a bookseller's in Lancaster, I met with an extract in the shape of a pamphlet of Doctor Joseph Priestley's "History of the Corruptions of Christianity." Never having seen any of that gentleman's polemic works, it was purchased. My mother as usual, came in, in the evening, to sit and converse with my family. I was reading the pamphlet. "What have you got ?" "A work of Doctor Priestley's on religion." I was then at the chapter of the "Doctrine of the Atonement of Christ," for the sins of the world. The title of the chapter excited the attention of my mother. Before she came in, the passage had been partly perused, and she eagerly asked me "to read the whole of it to hen?" I began, but had scarcely proceeded through two or three pages, when she rapped the book from thy hands, and threw it into the fire, where it was most deservedly burned. Smilingly, I said mother, why do you destroy my book? The reply was with an observable degree of anger, "because your book would destroy my happiness, in this and the world to come! I know that I have a Savjour, who redeemed me, whose blood was shed upon the cross for me: of this, I am convinced. Your book goes to make me doubt of the merits, of the sufferings, of that Saviour, The book would deprive me of the only staff, upon which my hope of splvation rests, and gives me none other, upon which I can lean." These notions of my beloved mother, which accorded fully with my own

Hin

bser-

locial

ings,

ting.

a wo-

dis-

b, of

day

th an

oity."

emic

came mily.

rot ?"

WAS

tone-

title

per-

e of it

from

L Was

ther

with

book

id to

emed

e: of

me

iour

upon

none

f my

OWD

on that topic, were submitted to with a suvenile frankness, which pleased her, and of all the world, I knew none whom I so much wished to oblige, as that dear, amiable and instructive mother. My father had been a mechanic of much respectability, and great skill. During the war, usually called "Bradock's war," and afterwards in Forbes' campaign; (in 1758,) he was at the head of the armoury, which in those days, was no mean station, and required talents of a superior grade. Afterwards, having made a tolerable fortune, he entered into trade, but his inclinations led him into chymical experiments. His evenings and mornings, were devoted to the laboratory. This gave rise to my mother's acquaintance with Mr. Priestly, as an experimental philosopher. For the instruction of his children, my father would discourse upon the subjects of science and particularly of chymistry, which was his: favorite theme, and in which the names of Franklin and Priestley, were sure to stand foremost. My beloved parent's manner, showed me that she was stung te the quick. My apology to her, had the desired effect, as her curiosity and mine, sprung from similar motives "4 desire to know the religious opinions of a man, of whom we had had superlative ideas," because of his acquirements in many other branches of knowledge.

The position wished to be proved to you, by this relation; which is true, is "that for the sake of pub"lic and private comfort and genial happiness, it is
better not to disturb the devout mind by fanciful and
newfangled schemes of belief, and that those should
be open only to the eyes of the learned!" My mother
was a person of extensive reading; her religious tenets and faith, were solely grounded on the scriptures,
of the Old and New Testaments, as these in her mindy
were considered as clearly correct, but nevertheless,
she was fearful of a disturbance of her mind by the
quirks and quibbles of deistical scribblers. Therefore
to interfere with her devotional principles, in so rude
and heterodox a manner, tended to derange her charma-

ing mind, and devastate those elegant maxims of Christian belief, which the excellency of her maximal education had infused into her heart; in short, to destroy that firmness, with which she relied on the merits and sufferings of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Such men as Hobbs, Chubb, &c. seem not to have reflected on the dreadful ills and calamities, their writings would create, if their books came into general circulation. If they did reflect, posterity ought to consider them to have been the typers and hyenas of human society, opposed to the well-being of the human race. Voltaire and John James Rousseau. in my humble opinion, intended well to the people of France, but when speaking of those gentlemen, we should recollect, that they, as well as the virtuous and celebrated Montesquieu, were the subjects of a prince, who might if he pleased, be despotic: but that which was still worse, was, that the people were abandoned to the control of a theological aristocracy—bigoted, wealthy, imperious and scandalously subjected to vices, in many instances, greater than those of laymen, insomuch, that in the reign of Louis XIV. because of the infamous lives, and the oppressions of all classes of the nation by the clergy, there was scarcely a gentleman in the kingdom, who was not deistically inclined. For when the ministers of a religion of so high sanctity, as that of our Holy Faith, demean themselves in a manner, which evinces to laymen, their want of confidence in the religion, (which they had been' consecrated to propagate and enforce,) by an unholy life and conduct, particularly in their cruel exactions. from devotees; in the latter instance, of enormous fees, and various demands of tithes of a most exerbitant nature, which from time to time, they wickedly usurped. Hence, it arose that Montesquein, Voltaire, Diderot, Rousseau, and hundreds of others, of the learned men of France, (considering the state of that government,) formed a phalanx of historic knowledge; genuine reasoning, true wit, and an inexhaustable fund of humor, which slurred their apponents to such

a degree, as in the minds of the generality of Europe gave them a deserved victory even over the government, which supported the theocracy, with its vast power. It also most probably, came from thence, that those men under the clerical persecutions raised against them, (for many were confined in the dungeons,) in the heat of controversy, emitted opinions and ideas, inconsistent with our pure simple and hely religion, according to the Augsburg creed, which we know, has been adopted, either in the whole or in part, by all the reformed churches. In polemic disputes, and perhaps more particularly, in those which happen in monarchies, there is an acrimony and irascibility of temper, inflaming the minds of men generally, greater than is the case in democracies. The becomes a machine or gurament, in democracies, it is the vehicle, by which the people simply adore God.

Those controversies, between the so styled philosophers of France and the clergy, were conducted with such hatred, and obloquy towards each other, that they elicited sparks, which enkindled that nation, in a dreadful flame of internal destruction; and the brand has not only communicated itself to all Europe, but in general to the world at large. Since the time of Julius Cæsar, nothing has occurred equal in barbarity; irruption, bloodshed, murder, by public or domestic treason, as that which has happened in Europe, since the year 1789. Gracious and omnipotent God, restore.

the peace of the world!!!]

ris-

duci

FOV

and

ave

rit-

eral

on-

hu-

nan

ım-

ace.

re-

who

Was

l to

enl-

ces,

180-

e of

s of

tle-

red.

nc-

ves

rant

een'

oly

bns,

OUS

bit-

dly

ire,

the

ble

Such is the man, who upon his slight intercourse with the American people, pluming himself, with the well-earned celebrity of his political pieces, that now presumes to become a reformer of our morals, our religious opinions and thinkings on Divine subjects a He himself a reprobate, cloaked by every vice, would dictate to a great and independent christian people, their formulary of belief. Such insolence and presumption, was never before witnessed unless it was in the instance of Mahomet, or in those of the im-

postures, (such as Sabbati Sevi,) who frequently as Micseins, appeared to deceive the remnant of the Jewish people. Paine with all his other vices had a foible injurious to our country. To keep up the spirits of the people it was requisite, that there should be a series of patriotic publications. Paine was the most indolent of mien; if he was inspired by a muse, the goddess most certainly, made him but few visits. The office of "secretary of foreign affairs," was conferred upon him, because of the merit of his "Common Sense " of what are called the "Crisis," under the signature of "Common Sease." It was to him personally a sinecure. He never went to York (Penn.) where Congress then sut, but occasionally, and staid but a day or two. His true employment, was that of a political writer. In the summer and winter of 1877 and 1778, he was en inmisse of my rather s nouse, as were the late David Rittenhouse, the state-treasurer, and John Hart, a member of the then "executive-council. " I made the State of the state of The although the

Paine would walk of a morning until 12 o'clock; come in and make an inordinate dinner. The rising from table was between two and three o'clock. He would then retire to his bed-chamber, wrap a blanket around him, and in a large arm-chair, take a nap, of two or three hours rise and walk. These walks, and his indolence, surprised my parents; they know him as the author of "Common Sense," who had written patrictically, and in those writings, promulged some moral and religious ideas, which induced them to believe he was an orthodox christian. Indeed Paine, during the revolution was careful to emit no irreligious dogmas, or any of his late diabolic ideas; if he had, the good sense of the American people, their virtue, and unfeigned worship of the Deity, would have, in those days, banished him from their country. Your grandfather's feelings a few months before his death, (which occurred on the 15th of December, 1786,) when speaking of the unbeliever (Paine,) were truly poignant; for now the wretch's true character had began to open on the world. He lamented with tears, that he had ever

admitted him into his house, or had a personal acquaintance and intercourse with him. He was from conviction, a sincere christian, converted by the scriptures; of a strong mind, and of a most tender conscience.

Jew-

foible

its of

be a

most

the

The

nfer-

tmon

r the

per-

enn.)

d but

poli-

and

coun-

ock :

rising

4 He

anket

ap, of

s, and

im as

patri-

moral

ve he

ng the

gmas,

good

d un-

rrand-

which

peak-

at; for

an on

d ever

Do not permit any thing now said, to induce you to undervalue the sagacity of my father, for he was wise: but of so benevolent a mind, that in the common affairs of life, he held a principle in morality as true, which is by no mean generally received; to wit, "That we should consider every one as possessing probity, until we discover him to be otherwise." Other gentlemen think differently. However, it may well be maintained that the side my father took on this topic, which I have often heard argued, accords with the true spirit of the gospel, the other side is stoicism. From these last. observations, you will readily perceive how easy it was to impose on my father. This is the reason for his entertaining Paine. I have said that Paine was indolent. Take this as an instance: The Crisis, No. V, is but a short political essay, to be sure of great skill in the composition, of much eloquent invective, strong reasoning, some historic anecdote, and a fund of ridicule which fitted the passions of the times. But recollect that this piece, to Paine, was a labour of three months in the enditing. It was written in my father's Mr. D. Rittenhouse inhabited the front room. in the upper story, where was the library. There he kept the office of the treasury of Pennsylvania. The room of Mr. Hart and Paine, was to the left hand as you come to the stair-head entering the library.

When my wound in 1778, was so far mended, that hobbling on crutches, or by creeping up stairs, (as you may have seen me of late years do,) my greatest recreation in my distressed state of mind, was to get into the chamber of Mr. Rittenhouse where the books were. There, his conversation, (for he was most affable,) enlivened my mind, and the books would so amuse it, that it became calm, and some desperate resolutions were dissolved. While that excellent man was employing his hours in the duties of his office, for the

benefit of the people, Paine would be snoring away his precious time in his easy chair, regardless of those inunctions imposed upon him by congress, in relation to his political compositions. His remiseness, indolence or vasuity of thought, caused great heart-burning among many primary characters, in those days. I have heard the late George Bryan, Reg. then vice-president of the council, speak of his gross neglects with remarkable harshness. I would sometimes go into Paine's mom, and sit with him. His Crisis, No. V, lay on his table, dusted: to-day three or four lines would be added, in the course of a week, a dozen more, and so on. No. V. in dated 2 ist March, 1378, but it was not published until some months after that date, and it was generally, thought by good whigs, that it had been too? long delayed. For my own part, I was so passionately engaged at heart, in the principles of our cause, that Paine's manner of living and acting, gave me a high disgust towards him. No idea could enter my mind, that any one in that noble struggle could be idle or disengaged. As to myself, my sensations were such, that the example of a Decius might have been renewed.

NOTE IX. page 1300

I have related this as I received it—from my own knowledge, I can say nothing—I leave to the world to determine the credibility the story is entitled to.

NOTE X. Page 132.

In farmer times, as now, lying was in vogue, but methinks within the last thirty years, there have been vast improvements in the art. Receive information of two instances, which were somewhat remarkable in those days. Simpson, one of the most spirited and active of officers—always alert—always on duty, was tra-

duced and vilified for a want of courage, because he was not taken a prisoner at Quebec. This small canton, (Paxton,) was bursting with the falsehoods propagated on this subject. On the other hand, captain M. Smith, our commander, was applauded for his immense bravery shewn in the attack of that place, when in fact, he was on the isle of Orleans, many miles distant from the city. Simpson had been commanded to that place by a regular order from colonel Arnold. Captain Smith skulked thither illicitly. Here is a fac-simile, as to orthography of Arnold's order to Lieut. Simpson, which I took from the original now in his possession. On my part, it seems to be a duty to make it known to you in justification of an excellent patriot, one of my friends from early youth.

"LIEUT. SIMPSON,

hrs

e in-

on to

ence

ning

ident

nark-

ine's

T- OR

d be

pub-

too n

ately'

that high

mind,

le or

such.

n re-

vorld

but

been

on of

"Sin—You are to proceed to Orleans, and take charge of the men there, and keep all provisions from going to town: you will be assidious in gaining the esteem of the inhabitants, who are now complaining that they have been treated in a rigorous manner: for provisions or assistance, you receive from them, you will pay them the value, or give orders on me for the for the same. I make no doubt but you will endeawour to cultivate the friendship of the people as far as is consistant with your duty. You will be carefull to keep your men under strict discipline, and not suffer them to have too much liquor. I am told there has been open house kept there. You will use as much common as is consistant with our curcumstances."

"Sir,

"Your humble servant,
"B. ARNOLD, Cok"

" December 29, 1775."

[This rigor was administered by a William Cross, our third lieutenant, with as free a hand as he was fax in his principles of morality. Cross was a hardsome

little Irishman, always neatly dressed, and commanded a detachment of about twenty men. The Canadian gentlemen, who came as agents from the islanders on this occasion, stated that Cross had extorted from them their wines and other liquors, and all kinds of provisions, which he lavished on worthless people; making no compensation for his exactions. This was rigor indeed! for the people of the isle were our friends. In short, this unworthy officer kept "open house," and had a short, but a luxurious and merry reign over that charming spot. He was not with us at the attack of the city, but gaily danced his way to quarters.

Smith wrote but Simpson acted. A letter from Smith to a worthy and patriotic clergyman, the Rev. Mr. Elder, of Paxton, which was filled with bombast and trash, and stuffed with the most flagrant untruths; that he was in the "midst of the battle—covered by smoke; bullets of all sizes playing around him, &c. &c." every word of which was fabulous. This person was among the last of those savage men, who murdered the innocent and unoffending Indians in the jail of the town we now live in. They have all died miserably; but a few remaining to relate the anecdote of the occurrence of that horrible massacre.

NOTE XII. page 168.

The late captain Thomas Boyd, the strongest and largest man among us, when coming to the air, frequently fainted; one Rothrock of Morgan's, had so fæted a breath, that it was disgusting to enter the room he inhabited; one of Lamb's company, lost his gums and some of his teeth, all were loose, of which, I am certain as his mouth was examined by me.

NOTE XIII. page 170.

This gentleman was 6 feet 4 or 5 inches high, and as well proportioned. His disposition, was a kindly

He spoke his own language admirably, and French fluently, but no English. Knowing from his military dress and manners, that he was a German. I was induced to address him in that language. He appeared astonished, yet pleased at hearing his own tongue from an American lad-inquired concerning Pennsylvania, our way to Quebec, &c. but seemed apprehensive of the jealousy of the English officially, who did not understand us. The Baron Knyphausen wanted an interpreter. Captain Prentis, who was really my friend made me the proposition, as from the Baron, and used various arguments to induce a compliance, all of which were spurned. In 1778 or 1779, I had again the pleasure of seeing the major at Lancaster, in the company of my father, but he was then a prisoner.

NOTE XIV. page 173.

Red willow (Salix purpurea.) This shrub, which is a native of the United States, is spread throughout our climates. The outer bark, of a deep red color, peels in a very thin scale, the inner is scraped off with a knife, and is dried either in the sun or over the fire. The scent when burning, is delightful. To increase the flavor, the Indians pluck the current years branches of the upland sumach, and dry it in bunches over the smoke of a fire. A half part of Red-willow bark, added to as much of the dryed sumach forms the killekinic. Those ingredients added to a third part of leaf tobacco, and the mass rubbed finely together in the palm of the hand, makes that delicious fume, so fascinating to the red, and also to the white men. Care must be taken by the consumer, not to use the swamp sumach (Rhus Vernix) for the upland (Rhus Glabrum) as the former is most poisonous, and resembles the latter, in the bark and leaf so much, that an incurious eye, might be deceived. The difference to a stranger may be distinctively marked by observing, that the

Mr.
t and
that
oke;
every
nong
innon we
few

ce of

nded

dian

s on

hem

rovi-

king

rigor

and

that

ck of

from

In

and uentceted n he s and cer-

and indly

bunch of berries of the upland sumach, is a cone closely attached to each other, and when ripe of a reddish color. The berries of the swamp sumach, hang loosely pendant, from a lengthy foot-stalk, and when ripe, are of a greenish-grey: at least I never saw the berry in any other state. The unhappy person, who would employ the swamp sumach in smoking, would forfeit his eyesight. This truth I had from Natanis in Canada, and it has since, many years ago, been confirmed to me by the celebrated Seneca "The Cornplanter." You know the experience of our own family, when clearing the swamp, as to the deleterious qualities of the wood as fuel: your mother suffered greatly from its poisonous vapors. The mocse-deer prefer the red-willow as food; we most frequently observed them in its neighbourhood. The vanilla of South America, has been applied by the Spanish manufactors of tobacco, in various ways; it is strange, that we have never assayed the Killekinic.

NOTE XV. page 174.

It will perhaps be proper to give you an idea of the parole exacted at that time. "We whose mames are hereunder written, do solemnly promise and engage, to his excellency general Carleton, not to say or do, any thing against his majesty's person or government; and to repair whenever required so to do by his excellency, or any of his majesty's commanders in chief in America, doth please to direct, in testimony of which, we have hereunto sectour hands this day at Quebec. August 7th, 1776.

I received the original paper in 1778, in consequence of an exchange of the St. John's prisoners for

NOTE XVI. page 187.

Who do you think this was? Why Stephen Lutze of Lancaster—poor but industrious. I have thanked him a thousand times since, and have had the pleasure of obliging him.

FINI'S.

dea ose ororiees-

ine ed-

ng

en

the

uld in on-

red neof ave

ver his oth ave

ust

nse-